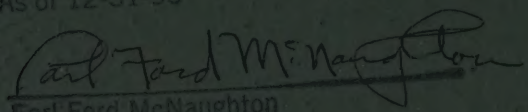
973.772
Bow

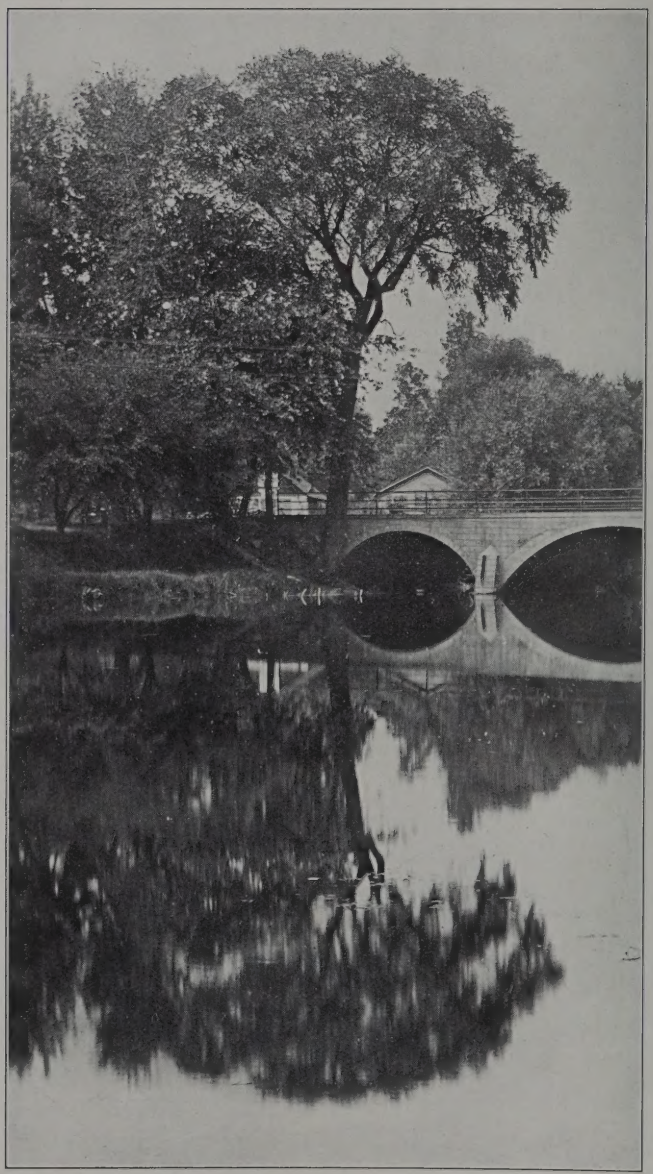
ST. JOSEPH *in* HOMESPUN

By Sue I. Silliman

Collection of Native North American Indian Books, Historical Books, Atlases, plus other important authors and family heirloom books.
As of 12-31-93



Earl Ford McNaughton



St. Joseph River

St. Joseph in Homespun

A Centennial Souvenir

By Sue I. Silliman

Hon. John H. Bowman

1931

Three Rivers Publishing Company, Three Rivers, Michigan

Copyright, 1931
Sue T. Silliman

Three Rivers Publishing Company
Three Rivers, Michigan

Dedicated to the Memory Of

Beloved Pioneers
Who Came to the Shores
of Old St. Joseph
During the Forties

1830 - 1930

Official Centennial Tribute

TO the memory of those God fearing, home loving, hard working folks, who in each succeeding generation of the history of our country, unselfishly dedicated themselves to the upbuilding of those things best, and laid well the foundations upon which has been builded integrity, fidelity and morality, without which no country can live.

In gratitude may we give ourselves to carry on in the same spirit, that those who come after us may look back on our handiwork and call us blessed.

AUSTIN C. RUGGLES
Mayor of Three Rivers, Michigan

May 15, 1931

FOREWORD

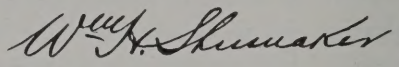
To write the foreword for a volume of the character of St. Joseph in Homespun is an honor. The volume is a delightful series of home spun tales and historic facts intimately connected with the settlement of Three Rivers and St. Joseph county. The setting of romance and early activities of pioneer development at the junction of the Portage, the Rocky and the St. Joseph are so vividly portrayed and pictured that the reader instinctively senses it has been accomplished only by the closest acquaintance with those who personally knew some of the people who founded the social and civic order of government and industry from which has come the present county with its great potentialities for the future.

No one but the daughter of pioneer parents, people who early came to Three Rivers before the stage of cobblestone "St. Joseph" street, when the present city was but a village on sandy "Portage ridge" projected between the Portage and Rocky rivers at their junction with the St. Joseph could have pictured the history of the county so completely and authentically.

St. Joseph county owes the author, Sue I. Silliman, a debt of gratitude for preservation of the valuable history of the county and community, compiling from a vast amount of material the essentials which make the series of homely, simple tales of life a century ago a living, present thing which we may know intimately. Miss Silliman, as Public Librarian for Three Rivers and in her position as State Librarian of the State Organization of Daughters of the American Revolution of Michigan has made a contribution which will become more valuable to all patriotic as well as historical organizations as the years pass, by preserving for all the future years a keenly selected record of events indicating that basis of pioneering individualism upon which was founded the present hospitable,

prosperous city of Three Rivers, and upon which it must depend in the outlook for the future, if the development and growth in education, religion and government is to continue.

We are happy to commend it as a book of the future as well as the present, and congratulate the author on having brought out so complete a volume.



Editor Three Rivers Commercial,
Three Rivers, Michigan.
June 1, 1931.

INTRODUCTION

To turn back the pages of years to the first settlers' stories seems an easy task, but looking backward becomes hazardous when the stories are to be retold, for we find many actors to whom all of the heroic deeds in turn are credited. and the dates of family events differing with the records of each branch of the family.

The story is told of Mrs. Norman Andrews, a witty pioneer lady, who was unexpectedly called upon by a toastmaster at a homecoming celebration at White Pigeon. He asked her to look back over the years and tell of pioneer times. Mrs. Andrews responded: "Intensive Bible study in the little old Sunday school at White Pigeon impressed on my childish mind a vivid picture of the awful fate which overtook Lot's wife for looking back. Friends, to this day I never do it. It isn't safe. I refuse to look back."

Notwithstanding Lot's wife and the warning by Mrs. Andrews, St. Joseph in Homespun as a Centennial Souvenir is a glance at the past of St. Joseph County—a compilation of pioneer stories retold. It is not a history but snapshots along the old Indian trails— glimpses caught from some vantage point when, through the shadowy forests, there passed St. Joseph county's colorful migration of pioneers.

The stories were collected, mainly, by the Abiel Fellows Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution and by the St. Joseph County Pioneer Association. They were originally published by local newspapers or in the Michigan Pioneer and Historical collections. Collated by the Three Rivers Public Library, they were republished by The Commercial in commemoration of the St. Joseph County Centennial, 1929.

The compilation attains book form in honor of the pioneers—their courage, endurance and sacrifices, as they platted and developed the villages of St. Joseph County which in 1930 have attained the century mark. Ranking first among them, at least in the hearts of their civic grandchildren, are Moab, platted July 28, 1830, by Christopher Shinneman; the village of St. Joseph, platted July 30, 1830, by Buck and McInterfer; and Three Rivers, platted November 28, 1836, by John H. Bowman—the three villages which today comprise the city of Three Rivers.

July 28, 1930 Sue I. Silliman
"Riversbye"
Three Rivers, Michigan

AUTHORITIES QUOTED

Bartlett and Lyon LaSalle in the Valley of the St. Joseph.

Constantine Weekly Mercury, 1855-1872.

D. A. R. Lineage Books.

D. A. R. Vital Records of St. Joseph County.

Cutler—History of St. Joseph County.

Fuller—History of Michigan.

History of St. Joseph County, 1877.

Littlejohn—Legends of Michigan and the Old Northwest.

Michigan Pioneer Collections.

News Reporter (Three Rivers), 1881-1905.

Portrait and Biographical Album (St. Joseph County), 1889.

Records of Service Michigan Volunteers.

St. Joseph County Court Records.

St. Joseph County Advertiser.

St. Joseph County in World War—Service Records, 1917-1918.

Three Rivers Reporter, 1861-1885.

Three Rivers Tribune, 1878-1906.

Vernon—History St. John's Episcopal Church, Three Rivers.

Weissert—Southwestern Michigan.

Western Chronicle, 1847-1861.

CONTENTS

Title Page
Dedication
Official Centennial Tribute,
Austin C. Ruggles, Mayor, Three Rivers - - - - - - - I
Foreword - - - - - - - - - William H. Shumaker II-III
Introduction - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - IV
List of Authorities Quoted - - - - - - - - - - - - V
List of Illustrations - - - - - - - - - - - - - - VI

PART I
GENESIS OF ST. JOSEPH

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	Indian Tribes of St. Joseph Valley - - - - -	1- 6
II	Indian Treaties, Trails and Traders - - - - -	7- 15
III	Indian Manners, Customs, and Beliefs - - - -	16- 25
IV	Noted Indians of St. Joseph Valley - - - - -	26- 32

PART II
ST. JOSEPH IN HOMESPUN

V	Travellers of the Thirties - - - - - - - - -	33- 34
VI	Settlements: White Pigeon; Nottawa, Centreville, a Centenarian; Leonidas; Colon; Sturgis - -	35- 52
VII	Lockport: Three Rivers, a Centenarian - - -	53- 74
VIII	Fabius; Mottville; Flowerfield; Park; Burr Oak; Fawn River; Sherman; Florence; Mendon -	75-125
IX	Constantine, Eschol - - - - - - - - - -	126-130

PART III
ST. JOSEPH IN THE FORTIES

X	Overland - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -	131-133
XI	The Forty-Niners - - - - - - - - - - - - -	134-137
XII	St. Joseph "Rings the Potle-Bell" - - - - - -	138-140
XIII	Flodden Waters - - - - - - - - - - - - -	141-142
XIV	St. Joseph in "Kirk-Claes" - - - - - - - -	143-151
XV	Book-Lear - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -	152-162

PART IV
ST. JOSEPH'S HONOR ROLL

XVI	Honor Roll, Peace - - - - - - - - - - -	163-172
XVII	Honor Roll, War - - - - - - - - - - - - -	173-194
	Fact Index - - - - - - - - - - - - -	196

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

St. Joseph River - - - - - - - - - - - - - - Frontispiece

Hon. John H. Bowman
Silhouette by Charles Troy Starr - - - - - - - Title Page

Arthur and Mary E. Stoufer Silliman, Pioneers.
Snapshot at "Riversbye" - - - - - - - - - Dedication

On the Portage River - - - - - - - - - Facing Page VII

Chief Samuel Manadoka - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 1

Cassoway and Gibson Trading Post - - - - - - - - - - 15

Sac' War Trail, Eschol - - - - - - - - - Facing Page 52

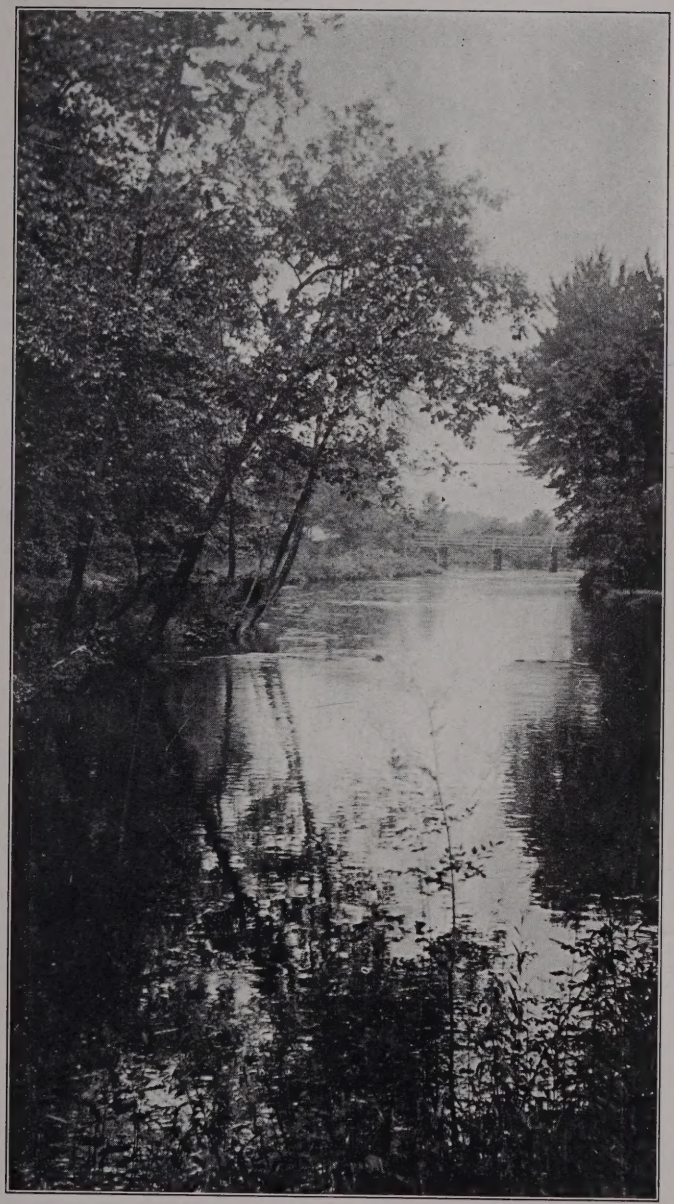
Mrs. Martha (Irey) Buck - - - - - - - - Facing Page 53

The Old Swimming Hole - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 172

Miss Ruth Hoppin - - - - - - - - - - Facing Page 172

Frank Dwight Baldwin, C. M. H. - - - - - Facing Page 173

Sundial, John H. Bowman Memorial Park - - - - - - - 195



On The Portage River BY L. C. BESLEY

Chief Samuel Manadoka BY V. H. VAN HORN

CHAPTER I

INDIAN TRIBES OF ST. JOSEPH VALLEY

"My soul seems caught in time's under-tow
And I'm floating again down the River St. Joe."
—Ben King.

There is a quaint old Indian legend of the Sau-wau-see-bee which tells of the fate of two young Indian women, twin sisters of a chief. They were swimming in the clear waters of a river and the river-spirit, jealous of their beauty, took the maidens as tribute. So the Indians called the river the Sau-wau-see-bee—the "Fate-of-the-Sisters". The Pottawatomies called the same river the Sauwk Wauwk Sil Buck, and the Ottawas referred to it as the Sau-gan-see-pe.

When the French explorers came, the cruel Sau-wau-see-bee was blest by the devout priests and renamed "St. Joseph," in honor of the patron saint of New France—the saint who guards and guides the travellers. The fertile valley of uncertain extent which bordered the river became "The St. Joseph township of the Old Northwest" and later St. Joseph county and was given the name of the river which carries a blessing.

In "La Salle in the Valley of St. Joseph" by Bartlett and Lyon, we read: "In the picturesque highlands of southern Michigan, not far from the city of Hillsdale, two rivers have the same source. One flowing southward, reaches the Maumee at Fort Wayne—the little St. Joseph. The other, an outlet of Baw Beese, flows northwesterly, then winding southwesterly dips into Elkhart county, Indiana, then flowing northward again runs rapidly to the Great Lake. This is the big St. Joseph. St. Joseph of the Lakes—the explorers' river of the Miamis." To read of LaSalle and his picturesque followers on the St. Joseph river, seeking the portage to the Mississippi, is to recall the names of many Frenchmen "whose zeal was the transcendant glory of France in America," whose picturesque fearlessness as explorers, voyageurs and fur-traders are a joy to the fireside traveller of today.

"With the invincible LaSalle, the leader of the exploring expedition, was Henri Tonty, the second in command, the latter a son of a noted financier of France. LaSalle was a devout Catholic and so it is not surprising that his party included three Recollect friars—Fr. Gabriel Ribourde, Lenobe Membre, missionary among the Illinois and Louis Hennepin. Then there were Boisrondet and L. Esperience, Jean Russel, a fur-trader on the St. Lawrence, Hillaret, master shipbuilder, le Mire and le Blanc, carpenters, Milleur, the nail maker and White Beaver the Mohican scout and hunter "who stood head and shoulders above the motley crew, above most of them morally as well as physically." Next to Tonty, he was the most reliable scout

obtainable in all the highways and byways of New France and seems to have been a living prototype of Cooper's "Last of the Mohicans."

In 1781 the fort St. Joseph, which had been established by the French and which dominated the river valley, was captured by the Spanish. It was the second raid on the fort. Indians and Spaniards carried off the traders and their goods. When the commandant demanded an explanation, the Indians excused their failure to protect the fort in the following letter:

"Father, I am hired by the Pottawatomi near St. Joseph's to acquaint you with the reasons of having suffered the Spaniards to carry off the traders. They came to St. Josephs at a time that all Indians were yet at their hunt, excepting a few young Indians who could not oppose one hundred white people and eighty Indians led by Seguinack and Nakewine who deceived them on the sentiment of the Indians in general. Had we assembled in time we should have given them a stroke such as we gave on the St. Joseph a few moons before".

DePeyster indignantly answered: "They threaten to destroy you. They never can until you are simple enough to shake their hands".

DePeyster does not mention the Spanish and there is no proof that the flag of Spain floated more than twenty-four hours over the fort. But Spanish records claim a decided victory and much goods and a settled conquest of St. Joseph valley.

The Three Brothers Federation

Of the three tribes which in later times inhabited the St. Joseph river valley, the Ottawas were brave and war-like. They fought and vanquished all who opposed their westward progress; with those who were friendly, however, they smoked the pipe of peace.

Friendly communications with the Ottawas, Chippewas and Pottawatomies resulted in the formation of a loose confederacy. They styled themselves "Brothers of Three Fires". Tradition mentions another tribe, "Mus-quah-tas," who established themselves in St. Joseph river valley but were almost exterminated when they sought to give battle with bows and arrows to the challenging Ottawas who were newly armed with white man's axes.

The Jesuit Relations and, later, the works of Parkman are filled with incident and interesting legend of these nations but for the Indians of St. Joseph county, Littlejohn's "Legends of Michigan and the Old Northwest" are more than legend, though less than fact as they mirror the restless Indian life in the early eighteen hundreds. The "Legends" were written by a man educated as a lawyer who had served as a state represen-

tative and, later, as a judge who presided over a territory which now comprises twenty Michigan counties.

To properly value the "Legends," it is necessary to know something of Flavius Josephus Littlejohn, the "Old Trailer", who is pictured by the pioneers of his day as a man of great personal integrity, one who understood and sympathized with the Indians. To regain his health, he became a surveyor and geologist in southwestern Michigan, avocations which necessitated his living among the Indians. For forty years, he had opportunity to study the race of whom he later wrote. He died in 1880 and perhaps the best impression of the integrity of this early author, may be obtained from the story of his burial at Allegan, with the special trains bringing hundreds who sought to pay tribute to a Mason of high standing, an eminent jurist and a politician whose integrity was unchallenged—though the opposition did most soundly berate his party.

A critic of his day says of the "Legends": "For data, for delineation of character, for topography, the reader may well trust Littlejohn." With this in mind, the old "Legends" may be read with greater appreciation of their delineation of Indian character, may be read to gain pictures of faithful Indian friendships, for descriptions of the flower covered Edens. now more prosaically know as St. Joseph, Kalamazoo and other counties—the region at one time known as St. Joseph township, "the land lying north of South Bend, Indiana, including that which is south of the Grand river in Kent County, Michigan."

To Littlejohn's great command of the English language he added the fluent style of the Indian orators. He who has braved Littlejohn's long, rolling sentences has been thrilled at the exploits of Chief Pokagon, the mighty warrior of the St. Joseph river valley, a past-master of Indian strategy in the battle of Three Rivers, as he captures the charming Shawnee princess and, to insure an ally's participation in the war, places the princess in the safe keeping of an otherwise indifferent neighboring tribe.

Then there is Wakazoo, of the Kalamazoo valley, sagacious in his home policy, using keen diplomacy in his contact with neighbors who outnumbered him—Pottawatomies on the south and Chippewas on the north.

Okemos, the famous chief of the Grand river valley, a powerful Chippewa, nephew of Pokagon, who was made chief not through an inherited title, but because of his personal bravery and endurance on the war path. As the third chief of the federation, he claims undivided attention, when with a thousand warriors, he leads towards Battle Creek to outwit and outflank the invaders.

The invasion was prompted by the covetous Grand Sachem, Elkhart, who desired the fertile valley of St. Joseph. He was ruler over all the federated bands of Shawnees on the Wabash. He was accompanied on the invasion by his daughter, the lovely princess Mishawaha, who when her father fell wounded in battle took command of the invading forces and led the skirmish line. She was assisted by Grey Wing, the intrepid but unsuccessful lover. Then there are the four characters who are of interest to good scouts everywhere: Wakeshma, the Three Rivers scout, Seebewa, from the Grand river valley; Dead Shot, the white hunter, lover and scout; Lynx Eye, the formidable dwarf from the Kekalamazoo.

The old legends cover the period between 1779 and 1812. They begin with the story of an Ottawa Indian hunter, who, belated, made camp on Prairie Ronde, and was almost killed by wolves. He was rescued by the white scout, Dead Shot, who came from the great Horse Shoe Bend of the St. Joseph, now Allegan, and thereby began the friendship which runs through all the stories. Minutely the action is laid before the reader: fighting forces, strategy used, attacks, retreats, losses. They are the stories heard from the lips of the Indian orators or from aged story tellers around the lodge-fires, welded together by the imagination of Littlejohn and retold in fluent phrases "that could well bedeck the speech of half a dozen lawyers and orators of today." A white man's attempt at an Indian's style of oratory and story telling.

For authentic history covering this period of Territorial Michigan, the best source of material is that of letters from commandants and agents. The most accessible copies of which are filed with the State Historical Association, and published in the Michigan Pioneer and Historical collections.

Letters of 1807 refer to a great council to be held at St. Joseph, where the Governor of Upper Canada and the Indian agents were to meet a large assembly of Indians, including the Indians of St. Joseph valley. From the letters, we infer that even among the young Indians of this period—long, long before words "socialist" and "Soviet" had assumed their direful meaning's, that the young Indians of St. Joseph county met the displeasure of their elders: "Were engaged the whole winter in parties and dances; and in open council listened to talk commandants and agents; the most accessible copies of which to assemble. There is mischief at bottom. Under pretense of restoring their independence and savage ancient character, it is in reality a general effort to strike somewhere a desperate blow".

It was a time of great uneasiness and it was with the true American ideal of "adequate national defense" that the commandant wrote: "We are in constant readiness to receive them,

either with the Olive Branch or the Bayonet, as circumstances may require".

Mound Builders

The genesis of the St. Joseph river valley is with the mound builders and their life in prehistoric times; with the Indian nations of the Lakes whose traditions have come down to us; with those epochs when St. Joseph, as a part of the Old Northwest, was under the flags of Spain, or France, or England; and that later period under the flag of our own United States when the husky pioneer followed fur trader and missionary along the well worn Indian trails to St. Joseph valley, in the Old Northwest.

"They were an agricultural people, having made considerable advancement in the arts of civilization. They manufactured pottery of clay and various implements, weapons and ornaments of copper and stone.

"They constructed extensive earthworks for religious uses. They worshiped the sun and offered sacrifices of their most valuable goods on altars made of burnt clay and then covered the altar and ashes and burned fragments of the offerings with mounds of earth.

"They laid their revered dead in shallow graves and heaped huge mounds of earth above them. The mysterious rites of burial were celebrated by the aid of fire and sometimes, we are told, a human victim was sacrificed above the grave. Many excavations in the mounds of St. Joseph county have furnished proof to the deductions of the antiquarians." Perhaps the largest unexplored mound remaining is at Fairfax. Something of its age is indicated by the large trees growing upon it. Many evidences of the mound builders' presence have been found in gravel pits in and near Three Rivers.

"The mound builders government was evidently strong enough to control large bodies of men in service to their government. They built extensive forticationsin positions well chosen for defense and in the primitive warfare, must have been almost impregnable. There is evidence that the mound builders worked the copper mines of the Lake Superior region. Antiquarians suggest that they only lived in the region of the mines in summer to obtain the copper and then came back to their homes in the more temperate climates, of the fertile river valleys. Northern Michigan has little evidence of their existence.

The garden beds of the mound builders of St. Joseph county, traces of which but few remain, were described by Bela Hubbard before the State Pioneer Society in 1877. He says of them: "They occupied the most fertile prairie land and oak openings. The garden beds consisted of raised patches of

ground, separated by sunken pathes and were arranged in blocks of parallel beds, five to sixteen feet in width and in length from twelve to more than one hundred feet, and in height six to eighteen inches. For years the tough sod of the prairie preserved very sharply these beds which were fashioned with skill, order and symmetry. The types found near Three Rivers were an oval plane surrounded by burr oak and contained 300 acres. The garden itself about a half mile in length by one third in width, contained about 100 acres, regularly laid out in beds running north and south, in the form of parallelograms five feet in width and 100 in length and eighteen inches deep. The Three Rivers gardens differed in some ways from all others that have been found in the valleys of the Grand, the Kalamazoo and St. Joseph Rivers."

It is sometimes claimed that the Indians never used fertilizers in their agricultural work, though the Colonists found that for centuries fish had been so used on the lands of New England. It is not difficult to believe that the garden beds of the St. Joseph valley, lying in the immediate vicinity of lakes and rivers, may have been likewise enriched by the use of fish. Settlers in the vicinity tell us that for many years the crops raised by white men on the old garden beds of the mound builders were much more abundant than in other parts of the farmland in the same locality.

Mr. Hubbard's article discusses further the antiquity of the gardens and their use. Under the latter head he considers the possible crops: "Maize was grown and cultivated in hills, not rows, and was disposed of in an irregular way." He does not believe it was planted in the garden beds. He suggests that, like the gardens of more southern Indians, the St. Joseph gardens may have been for many vegetables and roots used by the Indians that are unknown to us.

In St. Joseph county, Mr. Hubbard discovered further, that in widely separated places, labor and skill were apparent in little gardens, laid out in different styles, with an eye to the picturesque, "as if each family had not only its separate garden patch, but used it for the display of its own particular task". Evidently we, of a later race and day, are but reverting to the type of the aborigines in our love and display of the little garden.

CHAPTER II

INDIAN TREATIES, TRAILS AND TRADERS

Though for two centuries France had claimed the Old Northwest by right of exploration, England by the might of conquest and the United States with the spirit of '76, it was not until 1821 that the three Indian nations whose right was that of actual ownership through occupation, ceded the land that now lies south of the Grand river, north of the South Bend of the St. Joseph, east of the eastern shore of Lake Michigan, and west of the boundaries of Detroit and Saginaw treaties.

Rich in historical lore, southwestern Michigan presents no more picturesque scenes than the signing of the Indian treaties. In 1821 at Fort Dearborn (Chicago), within the old stockade, in all the gay splendor of beads and feathers and buckskin fringes, there were gathered the majority of the head chiefs of the Ottawa, Chippewa and Pottawatomie nations—for, according to their tribal laws, the consent of the majority of chiefs was necessary to legally dispose of their hunting lands.

We picture the chieftains in dignified council: Top-in-a-bee, Match-e-be-nash-she-wish, Met-tey-waw and others of high degree, surrounded by their warriors, interpreters, Indian agents, fur traders, soldiers of the fort, and two white men, one of whom represents the white father at Washington, General Lewis Cass, whose years of contact with the Indians had proven him fearless, determined—a man who "valued his word as he valued his life." The second commissioner was Solomon Sibley, the man who saved Michigan from being merged with Indiana and who later supervised the building of the Chicago road along the old Chicagua trail.

In exchange for their lands, the government guaranteed certain rights that were to be the Indians forever, but the results were unexpected. In contrast with the honorable methods of Cass and Sibley, the squatters and land speculators, with whiskey and trickery, obtained the choice lands within twelve years after the treaty was made, which had ceded it for Indian use forever.

The old Northwest furnishes no more vivid picture of Indian justice than that meted out by lawful Pottawatomie chiefs, who, though they refused to sign the second treaty to cede the reservations, nevertheless fulfilled, peaceably, the terms of the treaty which had been fraudently signed by unauthorized warriors. The pledged word of the Pottawatomie nation had been given—but they killed the Indian signers.

Boy Scouts seeking Indian names may glory in some of the names of the Indian signers, though their deeds, of necessity, must be judged from the Indian's standpoint.

The Pottawatomie signers of 1821 included: Top-in-a-bee, Mee-te-ay, Wee-saw, Waw-we-wek-ke-neck, She-shaw-gan, Waw-seb-ban, Aw-be-tone, Shaw-ko-te, Shee-shaw-gun, Shaw-waw-nay-see and scores of others.

In the long list of signers of the later treaty one can but conjecture which ones were killed for signing. The only familiar name is that of Pierre Moreau, who was the usurping head of the Nottawa Seepe band.

Indian Trails

Our great highways over which the automobiles smoothly spin follow the old Indian trails.

St. Joseph county had three types of trails: hunting, trading or portage, and the war trails. The portage trail was followed by Indian, trader, missionary, surveyor and settler. The hunting trail originally followed the pathways made by game to salt licks and drinking places. The hunting grounds of each tribe were clearly defined and woe to the Indians who trespassed. In an article by Mrs. Susan Fisk Perrin, concerning the trails of St. Joseph county, Mrs. Perrin describes the war trail as deeper and wider than the others and tells of cleared spaces which were made at certain distances along the war trail where the warriors could camp. There were thousands of places where the Indians could secrete themselves in times of danger.

Mrs. Perrin located many of the trails, and followed them. She found that there were three war trails running across the county besides the main portage and hunting trails. The most important trail was the old Chicagua trail, now U. S. 112, along which every year the Indians passed to receive their annuities from the government. The trail entered the county in the southeastern part of Burr Oak, passed southwesterly through Fawn River, between Honey and Sweet Lakes, then westerly through Sturgis, White Pigeon and Mottville.

The Washtenaw trail entered St. Joseph county from Calhoun county in the northeast corner of Leonidas township, ran southwest to Nottawa Prairie, via Centerville, through the southeast corner of Lockport township just south of Three Rivers, then to Mottville where all trails met at the "Grand Traverse." This trail became the Ypsilanti branch of the old Territorial Road.

Another old trail ran north from Mottville, forded the St. Joseph forty rods above the mouth of the Rocky, at Three Rivers, then passed through the Zierle and Null farms, and the Barnes estate, then paralleled for several miles that which later became part of the Buckhorn road north. Down this trail is pictured the Shawnee's headlong flight in the battle of Three Rivers. The tradition is somewhat substantiated by the quan-

tities of arrow heads found in the fields which border the trail. Beside this trail in Park township stood the old Buckhorn tavern for which the road of later years was named.

Miss Hoppin wrote: "What pioneer does not remember the Buckhorn road as it wound through the forest from Three Rivers? The only houses for years were those of Joseph Sterling, Grant Brown, Abram Schoonmaker, and Reuben Bristol. The pole bridge on this road which crossed the great marsh just below the outlet of Goose lake was another landmark known all over the country. The Indian trail from the Marantette agency at Nottawa Seepe struck the main road just below the pole bridge. The trail passed across the Kellogg farm in Park and crossed the Portage river by the White Man's bridge about a mile below Portage lake."

Voyageurs And Fur-Traders

"Dans mon chemin, Jai recontre
"Troise Cavalieres, bein montees,
L'on, ton, laridon danee
L'on, ton laridon, dai."
So sang the voyageur.
"Trois Cavalieres, bien montees,
L'une a cheval, l'autra a pied,
L'on, ton, laridon, dai."
L'on, ton, laridon danee.

To it's lilt, sturdy arms sent the batteaux along, for the years of Michigan's fur trade under the happy-go-lucky Frenchman was the period of greatest romance as well as greatest hardships. A time filled with hampering laws, but laws completely ignored by the picturesque coureurs de bois who hunted the beaver with might and main.

In the currency of the trading post, "one beaver was worth one jug of brandy, four beaver worth eight pounds of powder, two beaver, one red blanket." Two words from the old currency survive as slang expressions in the speech of today: "doe" and "buck"—the latter a buckskin was the equivalent of one dollar.

The traders were divided into two classes: the coureurs de bois—the unlicensed, lawless trader, and the licensed trader who was more or less lawabiding.

After the abandonment of LaSalle's fort at the mouth of the St. Joseph there is no record of fur traders in St. Joseph river valley until about the close of the Revolutionary war, when from New Jersey came William Burnette, an independent trader, who located at the mouth of the river, but who covered the territory of the entire St. Joseph river valley. His success brought him into disfavor with the commandant at Michili-

mackinac, who ordered him to report to the post. Burnette refused but, being threatened, agreed to try living at the post for a year. However, when he refused to stay longer than the year, he was sent to the guard house under arrest and then to Montreal to prison. When at last he was permitted to return to the St. Joseph valley, his property had been almost entirely confiscated by his clerks, and the other English traders had invaded his territory. But the quick witted Yankee wooed, won and married Princess Kakima, daughter of Headchief Amiquiba, two of whose children left indelible marks on the history of Michigan: Princess Kakima, as the wife of Burnette, and her brother, Headchief Top-in-e-be, considered the greatest of Pottawatomie chieftains. He was the signer of all of the important treaties which granted cessions to the white people.

The old chronicles pictured the marriage of Burnette, the white fur trader, and his Indian princess. The ceremony performed by the Rev. Father La Vi Deaux, the Catholic missionary, with all the pomp and circumstance due so important an occasion. The marriage gave Burnette an influence among the Indians which no British trader could undermine, so for many years he remained unmolested, seldom leaving his home except to market his furs on an annual trip to Michilimackinac or Detroit.

Three of Burnette's old account books are on file in the Burton Collection, Detroit. Though figures are dull reading, it is most interesting to note the records for one year, of one trader's output from the St. Joseph river valley. For the year 1796-7, the old account books show the sale of "117 beaver skins, 97 fishers, 1591 deer, 3127 doe, 5091 muskrats, 160 bears, 250 wolves, 1250 redskins, 215 cats, 280 foxes, 517 mink, 2899 bucks, 436 otter, 22,032 raccoons and 2680 "enfants du diable"—skunks."

Concerning William Burnette's family of seven children, but little is known except that James, the oldest son, succeeded to his father's business, having been given a white man's education at Detroit. Abraham Burnette became interpreter for Daniel McCoy, the founder of the mission. An amusing exploit of one of the sons—amusing for the reader—was of his bringing the wrath of the Indians upon himself for some youthful prank. They had bound him to be burned at the stake in the front yard of a trader named Godfroy. Mrs. Godfroy pretended a desire to take vengeance in her own hands, bought the boy for five gallons of whiskey and sent him in disguise to his people.

Concerning Princess Kakima, Burnette's Indian wife, to whom fell the task of training five sons, who on the father's side inherited a white man's viewpoint, and from their mother

an Indian's love of a wilderness life. Kakima, like her husmand, must have been an unusual type, for from the evidence of her boys and of the chief men of her tribe, she was not only a princess and chief through inherited title but won an outstanding place through her influence toward their betterment. The place and time of her death are a mystery, though the old settlers' tradition places her burial place on an island in the St. Joseph river which, until the building of the Sturgis dam, was but a short distance above the covered bridge. The old island burial place is now many feet under water. It is said by the old settlers that every year members of the tribe from across the Mississippi and from the far north quietly glided into the neighborhood of the burial place, left tributes of flowers or trinkets and as silently stole away.

The Burnettes were followed by many other fur traders in the St. Joseph valley but St. Joseph county records give few names: A. T. Hatch, near Appletree ford, Godfroy brothers, Pierre Navarre and Patrick Marantette are perhaps the most important.

The site of the Hatch trading post was located in 1920 by the Daughters of the American Revolution. It stood at the Ox-box, just across the river from the Pottawatomie reservation, on the Nottawa Seepe. Very little is known of Trader Hatch, except his marriage to an Indian woman, and that by his later marriage to a white woman, he has many descendants in the county.

The Cassoway and Gibson trading post on the St. Joseph "at the confluence of the rivers" was located by Dr. Blanche Moore Haines some years ago in LaSalle Park, Three Rivers. It was marked with a granite boulder by the Abiel Fellows Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution.

Of Pierre Navarre, little is known other than his association with Burnette in his later years and of his location near Mendon. Tradition claims him as a descendant of the royal family of old France.

The Downing's trading post, now near Ketcham's Corners, was in territorial times on the Ypsilanti branch of the territorial road. It was on land first located by Lindsey Warfield in 1831. Little is known of this post other than the records in the probate court at Centerville filed in the early thirties. An old invoice of goods on hand at the death of Downing, itemized articles for whose use we of the present day can only guess: "Indian knee hands, footing, bobbinet footing, wampum, sneath, 20 yards barraze, sticks of twist, lute string, etc."

The probate records give an interesting list of names from Downing's ledger: Morans—Wabega Ann, Isadore, Pierre, Nancy, Joseph, evidently the whole family. Then we find Shobi Sparep, Ship-she-Manowoe, Sheano as typical In-

dian names and as proof of residences in 1831: Selden Martin, P. and J. J. Godfrey, A. L. Hatch, Stephen Downing (a Revolutionary soldier and father of Rufus) and the names of the Lairds, Moutons, Engles, Dushames, Shellhouse and a long list of other interesting characters of the times.

The fur trader, however, whose life thrills the imagination is the sage and diplomat of Nottawa Seepe, Patrick Marantette, who to the St. Joseph valley Indians was counselor and friend.

Patrick Marantette

Patrick Marantette, "a scion of the House of Navarre," a native of Detroit, where he had been educated under Father Gabriel Richard, came to Godfroy Trading Post at Nottawasippi in 1833. He preempted a section of land which included the post and an Indian village.

In 1833 he assisted Governor Porter in paying off the Indians when their land was sold. His descendants still have the cloverleaf mahogany table on which were heaped the money and merchandise for the payment.

John S. Barry, writing to his friend Lucius Lyon, presents a picture of the reservation when Governor Porter "came out." Representative Barry speaks plainly of the unpopular Governor Porter and graphically portrays a scene on the Indian reservation: "During the payment, two weeks ago, on the Nottawasippi, Governor Porter made even uncommon bluster. He broke in the heads of whiskey barrels with a sledge and swaggered and bullied in a manner quite unbecoming to a governor. Every person on the grounds was disgusted and incensed with him. He found such a current against him that he was alarmed for his personal safety and, being a coward, as you know, on the last day came armed, Cap-a-pie, sword and pistols by his side. He said though he had been in the land of the Hoosiers and even at White Pigeon, yet people of Nottawasippi were the worst he had ever met and vowed to return in the spring with troops. One poor Justice (Coffinberry) must make acknowledgments to him. His crime was selling ginger cake. The justice refused to apologize, saying he would not hold office under such a '———————— scoundrel.' "

In 1832 Patrick Marantette, at the age of twenty-six, was employed by Peter and J. J. Godfroys, agents at the reservation at Nottawasippi. He succeeded Mons. Francheval Navarre and John B. Ducharm, who were in possession from 1831 until 1833. In 1836 the post was purchased by Mr. Marantette. When he came as Indian agent, there were 1,500 Indians on Gourdneck and Nottawa prairies. Mr. Marantette says that their leading men at the time were: Pe-qui-te-ke-sie, Swa-gah-maw, Swa-wah-quet, son of Peter Moran, and Pe-

ne-she, a celebrated orator, and She-pe-she-wah now, a great warrior—chief of the Pottawatomii, and Mac-caw-moot.

The trading post consisted of two buildings, one story in height, each 16x18 feet in dimensions, with a covered hall measuring 16x10 feet located between them, as a meeting place for the Indians. In the rear was a place for the reception of furs, about 30 feet in length. The Indians held some of their wildest festivities near the post on the banks of the St. Joseph.

In Mr. Marantette's first year he purchased 4,000 deer skins and gave in exchange for other furs over $16,000.

In his reminiscences published in the Michigan Pioneer and Historical collections, Mr. Marantette says:

"In the spring of each year, the red hunters of the forest and the trappers of the river, would set the grass of the marshes on fire, to cause the flight and appearance of game —deer, beaver, muskrat and otter—and the prairie would be a sea of flame. In the night time it was an awe-inspiring scene.

"Succeeding their fires, the month of May brought forth the sweet grass and Nature again restored her bright carpet.

"The Indians had in their village thirty or forty huts made of poles laid up like loghouses with bark roofs and a hole cut through the center for the smoke to escape. These were their permanent residences, their temporary ones while on their hunting expeditions being bark tepees. They raised corn, potatoes, and beans in a small way, but did not harvest very heavy crops owing to their method of cultivation and the trespassing of their white neighbor's cattle. In the winter they went into the heavy timber for a better protection from the cold and to make maple sugar in the spring, which was very fine, packing it in mokucks,' a kind of flat basket of fifty or sixty pounds weight. They were very fond of gay attire, red and blue being their favorite colors."

When asked concerning incidents which had happened during his occupancy of the post, Mr. Marantette told many interesting stories, among them of the death of old Quicet: "The aged chief was a member of one of the wildest tribes. He was jealous, gloomy and very fond of liquor; very envious of the leading chiefs of the more civilized bands, and sought their downfall.

"One day in December, 1833, the Indians were gradually gathering around the trading-post, to receive their annuity from the government. Sau-au-quette, whom Mrs. Marantette ever referred to as wicked Sau-au-kette, a large, tall, manly-looking chief, came riding across the prairie mounted on a splendid horse. The chief was arrayed in half

American uniform, with pistols, sword, epaulettes—presenting to his people a very martial appearance. He was received with enthusiasm and being somewhat 'set-up,' commenced at once his harangue—boasting of the great sale he had made of the reservation—land owned by the Great Spirit, and that for two quarts of whiskey he would sell the same again should opportunity occur.

"Hardly had he ceased, when Quicet stepped up to him in a shrewd, cautious manner and seizing one of his pistols snapped it at Sau-au-kette. The priming being damp, it did not ignite and the life of Sau-au-kette, as by a miracle, was saved. The feud was over the sale of the reservation by an unauthorized chief.

"Quicet in the meantime disappeared, but eighteen months afterward Sau-au-kette and Quicet again met. The latter was slightly intoxicated. Sau-au-kette's squaw came into the post and bought a knife. In a few moments she retuned and announced: 'Killed Quicet.' The startled trader demanded 'What for?' 'Quicet poison my husband Sau-au-kette, I kill.' "

Marantette feared more trouble. He hastily sent a message to Mocco-gah-mant, the "Chief of Bears" and son of Quicet, to come and bury his father. "Life for a life" is the Indian's custom, but Mr. Marantette saved the life of Sau-au-quette's squaw by paying the chief at his father's burial a horse, saddle, rifle and blanket, in all about $150.00.

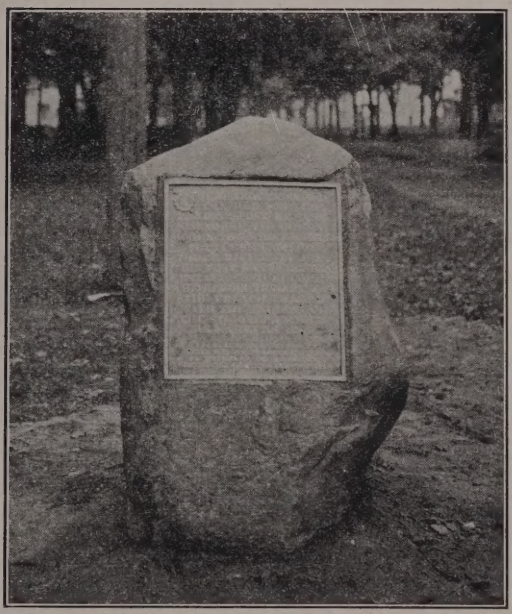
"The nearest white neighbor to the post was Francois Mouton, a Frenchman. He was an elderly man, possessed of an excellent French education. He came to St. Joseph in 1831 with his wife and seven children. The daughter, Frances, became the wife of Patrick Marantette in 1836."

Mr. Marantette held several responsible positions under the government. He surveyed and assisted in platting a new town, planted orchards, fenced fields and in 1846 was elected a representative from St. Joseph county to the state legislature.

An unpublished letter, written by Mr. Marantette, concerning affairs after the sale of the reservation was a gift to the public records department of the Three Rivers library, for the use of St. Joseph county research workers. The letter was written to Lucius Lyon and was the gift of Mrs. James H. Campbell of Grand Rapids, an able investigator, who rejoiced in the preservation of Michigan's priceless historical material. The letter voices a plea for the payment by the government of a just claim for 'goods necessary for the welfare of the Indians.'

"I frequently relieved the Indians' wants by giving them goods . . . . furnished them with such articles as seemed indispensably necessary . . . . My claim is different in many respects from others . . . . I gave to them with the consent and approbation of government officers, assured that I would be speedily paid. I was instrumental in their peaceable embarkation. My house was the Indians' rendezvous." The letter vividly recalls the consequences of the treaty of 1833 when the Pottowatomies give up their lands and migrated to the west.

Victor H. Van Horn's interesting group of historical pictures on file at the library, includes one of Madame Patrick Marantette's room, with its huge fire place, its pictures and old furniture imported from France. Another picture is of the old account books which, as one reads them, induces a second look at the pictures in a quest of demijohns.



CASSOWAY AND GIBSON TRADING POST, LA SALLE PARK

CHAPTER III

INDIAN MANNERS, CUSTOMS AND BELIEFS

"In the golden hued Wa-za-pe-wee—the moon
when the wild rice is gathered;
When the leaves on the tall sugar-tree are
as red as the breast of the robin,
And the red-oaks that border the lea are
aflame with the fire of the sunset,
From the wide-waving fields of wild-rice,
from the meadows of Pain-ta-wak-pa-dan,
Where the geese and mallards rejoice, and
grow fat on the bountiful harvest,
Came the hunters with saddles of moose and
the flesh of the bear and the bison,
Came the women in birchen canoes well laden
with rice from the meadows".

"Tell me what a man eats and I will tell you his manners", may be an outgrown proverb, but ethnologists, with the history of the Indian race before them, claim that the water-grown foods of the Michigan Pottawatomies had much to do with their quiet dispositions. The Pottawatomies were rice eaters. If they gathered more rice than they needed they stored it for the time of need, and "when the hungry primitive man began storing away food for future use, he took a highly important step in civilization."

The fertile land cultivated by the St. Joseph county Indians, produced many vegetables unknown to the white man's table, but the Indians were not limited to garden grown delicacies. Many of his most highly prized dishes came from the rivers and lakes. One of them is described by Peter Schall, son of Charles Schall, a pioneer from Northumberland county, Pennsylvania, in the early "thirties". Mr. Schall tells of the "pond-lily" ovens found on his father's farm when they cleared the land located on the oxbow of the St. Joseph river in Constantine township, not far from Mottville. The ovens were usually found by the point of the plow or by the stumbling of a horse as he crashed through the top. The pond-lily ovens were about twenty-two inches in diameter and sixteen or eighteen inches deep. They were made by excavating a small hole in the ground which was then lined with stones and clay. In this were placed the pond-lily roots which had been covered with clay. When they were baked they were considered a great delicacy. The ovens were sometimes also used for corn and for the cooking of water fowl and prairie chickens.

Wild rice was not so much a delicacy as it was a necessity. The United States Bureau of Ethnology gives an excellent description of the harvesting of the wild rice and gives something, also, of its effect as a food. It states:

"The Pottawatomies have a moon called 'manominikegises' (the moon-to-gather-the-wild-rice). It is the full October moon when the annual rice harvest takes place.

"In the St. Joseph river valley, with its fresh water streams and small alluvial lakes, there grew the wild-rice. Wherever the last glacier left little mud-buttomed, water-filled hollows, there wild-rice established itself. Water-fowl had sown the rice in flight and the Indian had carried it to his favorite lakes and streams. Indian tradition first tells of the rice as being found in the Menominee river which flows between the states of Michigan and Wisconsin".

"The Pottawatomies gathered the grain by pushing the boat into the thick rice, bent the tops over the boat and pounded out the grains with a 'rawagikan', a stick made for the purpose. They sometimes pounded it in a sack, sometimes in a skin lined hole in the earth.

Carver wrote: "After the grain was cured, the Indians, wearing moccasins, trod off the hull. Wooden troughs, blankets, mats, woven bark, all were used to hold the grain. The birch bark boxes sewed together with 'bast' (the bark of the basswood) were called mococks and were the most ornamental, though smallest of the containers."

In gathering the rice, women did most of the work. They united and gathered it by groups. Chief Pokagon wrote: "Our people always divide everything when want comes. Each family, however, controls a certain amount if they have complied with a few requirements." Pokagon also stated: "Indians eat when hungry and trade at harvest time. A few save a little wild rice to eat in the spring with maple sugar." Early writers always spoke of the superior physical manhood of the Indians in Southern Michigan, as well as of their peaceful dispositions. Doubtless both, in no small measure, were due to food, to the rice and fish to be had in abundance. "The river influence in general tended toward peaceful living. It furnished quick, permanent and easy means of travel". "Out of kinship of the tribe grew patriotism for their home land which was very noticeable when the Indians pleaded that the government let them remain at Nottawa Seepe, the "land of their sugar orchards, their rice fields, and the graves of their fathers".

In Blair's Indian Tribes of the Great Lakes, we read:

"It is to be remembered that the Pottawatomies or Potawattomii (Potewa ronik) are members of the great Algonquin

stock which divided into three divisions at Sault-Ste-Marie. The present Potta-wat-um-ees or "Those-who-make-a-fire" came southward along Green Bay and Lake Michigan. In 1658 they reported at the head of Green Bay and were called Oupouteouatamik, numbering about 3000, which included 100 of the Petum (tobacco) tribes. Marquette's map of 1673 places the 'Pstestame', as he called them, on the shores of Green Bay. At this time they were noted traders and were the middle-men between the Indians farther inland and the French. Their trading instinct probably explains their following the French into St. Joseph county.

Hoffman, the traveler through Michigan in the "thirties", translated the word Pottawatomie as "We are making fire". He also classified the tribe as belonging to the numerous nations of the Algonquin origin. J. W. Powell, of the Bureau of Ethnology, explains that the Algonquin family was the most extensive of all the linguistic stock. "Their territory reached from Labrador to the Rocky mountains and from Hudson Bay to the Carolinas. Their related tribes were at the height of their power between 1500 and 1800". Hoffman writes that the Pottawatomies were rather a placid nation, not driven by the feverish activity of the Iroquois, though fleet and agile when necessity compelled. "Before the coming of the missionary, they believed in the existence of one God, whom they termed the Kasha Maneto. Kasha was never applied to any but the Supreme Being." He is the Kitchi Manitou of later authorities.

At heart the American Indian seems essentially religious. His sacrifices, his fasts, his ceremonies, most rigidly adhered to, take precedence over all else. This is especially true of the Pottawatomies of the St. Joseph valley.

Rev. William Metsdorf, in an address before the Michigan Pioneer Association stated:

"They believe in Kitchi Manito, the creator and benefactor of all mankind; they honor and adore Him as the sun, or moon. They express their worship by dances, which are to them devout religious ceremonies. They have three great dances, each one lasting from two to three weeks: First, the 'green bean' dance in early summer when the bean is first ready to be eaten; second, and the most elaborate, the 'green corn' dance, when the corn is first ripe. Later in the season is the third, a powwow, a celebration, which like our Thanksgiving day, includes a turkey in its ritual. However, they place their turkey in the center of the dancing ground, which to them is a sacred place.

"All of these feasts include speeches, singing and smoking. The latter being done with one pipe for the entire crowd of a hundred or more. During the powwow, they thank the

sun for the crops which he has given them, and the weather which has given aid.

"On the last day of the powwow, there is a special ceremony over a sacred dog which has been killed and cooked. Loudly singing their songs, they circle in a dance around the skull of the dog. The dance ends with a final jump on the skull. The dog takes something of the place of the scape goat of Old Testament ritual. At this ceremony outlaws of the tribe, if penitent, may receive pardon by the chief and be reinstated in tribal membership.

"The Pottawatomies placed their dead seated in a shallow grave, and leaning against a tree, with a dog tied to a nearby tree as watchman. When the dog got loose and returned to the Indian village, it was a sign that the spirit of the dead Indian was safe in the happy hunting ground." Reverend Metsdorf wrote: "Several times I made both the watch dog and the Indian village happy by surreptitiously releasing the dog."

Among the many special feasts which the Pottawatomies observed was the ceremony at the naming of the children. It consisted of a feast prepared by young, unmarried men, in a tepee especially erected for that purpose. After the feast, an old man, because of his wisdom, delivered an oration, and announced the name of the child. The name given at birth was changed at critical periods of life: puberty; the first bird or animal slain; first war expedition; elevation to a chieftainship, finally, when retiring from active life, he adopted the name of his son. Each Indian, however, had a name which he jealously guarded. It was one which he received or took after much prayer and fasting. It was considered identical with his most secret, innermost self and if anyone ever did find it out, it was an unpardonable offense to call the person by it. It was the name by which he was personally known to the Great Spirit.

Rev. Metsdorf tells us:

"The Pottawatomies seldom quarrel in their homes. They are never cruel to their children. Their patience with children is astonishing. If a married pair have differences, are angered, one of the two goes to stay with some neighbor until the other one in the quarrel asks him or her to return.

"They dislike water, even for hygienic purposes and their passion for strong drink has become proverbial. "The Pottawatomie man has a peculiar abhorrence for sickness. If a member of his family became sick, he left the house to stay with a neighbor, sending the neighbor's wife to take care of his sick wife or child."

Games

The Pottawatomies excelled in dice games, tops and

archery. The Chippewas, who were a more active people, played the stick games, archery, hoop and pole, racket, snow-snake, shinny, hand and foot ball and also the dice games.

Of the games of chance, Pugasaing is the principal game played among all northern tribes. It is a dice game and is played with thirteen pieces, cut neatly from bone. The pieces are shaken in a wooden bowl, called onagun. Two of the pieces are called ininewug or men. They are wedge shaped so that in throwing them they may stand on end. Two are called gitshee kenabik, or great serpent—one of them fintailed. They stand lengthwise on their wedgeshaped bases when thrown Another piece is the war club; another is the keego or fish. There are four circular pieces of brass, slightly concave, with a flat surface on the apex—these are the ozawabiks, and lastly three bird shaped pieces called sheshebwug, or ducks.

One side of all of the pieces is polished and one side painted red, with the exception of the brass pieces which are painted black on the reverse side.

In playing, if one of the ininewugs stands upright on the bright side of a brass piece it counts 158. When all pieces fall red side up and the gitshee kenebik with the tail stands on bright side of brass piece, it counts 138. When all turn up red it counts 38. When the two gitshee kenebik and the two ininewugs turn up white and the other pieces red, irrespective of the brasses, it counts 38. When all pieces turn up white it counts 38. When one of the ininewugs stands up it counts 50. When either of the gitshee bakenabiks stand up it counts 40. When all are white except one duck (sheshemug) and that is red, it wins 5. The game is won by the red pieces and goes to the first person winning 500 points.

Charlevoix, in describing the Pottawatomie Indians, told of their games; and explained in detail the game of straws which was usually played in the hut of a chief. The straws were the size of wheat straw, about two inches in length and a bundle contained 201. With many contortions and incantations to the spirits, the Indians separated the straws into bundles of ten, using a thorn or sharpened bit of bone. The stakes were their clothing.

The game of moccasin was their most universal gambling game. Each player removed a moccasin and they were placed in a row. The player skillfully placed a counter—usually a small, polished bit of bone—in one of the moccasins. The other players used two sticks or wands. The light colored one was used to touch the moccasin in which he thought the counter was hidden, with the dark wand he touched the moccasins which he believed did not contain it. Intense in everything he does, the Indian loves gambling next to whiskey and

it brought so much hardship to the losers that the government prohibited moccasin among the western tribes.

As a game of dexterity, archery included many forms. The target was, of course, an important feature. The Pottawatomies had a game in which they buried their bark target. The Indians on the old reservations called it ta-te-wan. Four Indians, each with a bow and two arrows, play partners. Two strips of bark about four inches wide are placed in mounds of earth, the mounds about 200 feet apart. One player of each side takes his place near a mound, A and C at one mound, B and D at the other. If A strikes near the target but misses with both arrows and C fails to strike nearer than A, it counts A one. If C strikes nearer it scores C one. If either arrow strikes the target it counts him five. If both arrows of either A or C strike the target the game is won (ten being out). If both A and C. hit the target neither counts and the arrows are returned by B. and D.

Women And Children's Games

Much is written about the drudgery of the Indian women but they also had pastimes and games, which included hand ball, throwing sticks, hidden ball and different forms of the snow-snake. The latter was played on the snow or ice and the only thing necessary was a hard wooden stick, five feet long, with one end rounded. The player stooped toward the ground, held the snake horizontally from right to left and forced it towards the rounded end, skimming along rapidly. A bank of snow slightly inclined away from the player gave the snake an upward curve as it left the hands, thus propelling it a considerable distance in the air before touching the ice. The snow bank corresponded, somewhat, to the tee in golf. Women sometimes played the snow-snake by using an animal rib, to one end of which two feathers had been attached. It was thrown as a glider.

A child was given a tiny bow and arrow just as soon as he could walk. The children had a great variety of amusements,—top spinning, mimic fights and sports, imitative of their elders. The men and boys, women and maidens had innumerable games which they played at fixed seasons as an accompaniment to festivals and religious rites. The Walter Culin report in the 24th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology records hundreds of interesting games played by the Indians of the United States. Among all the games and sports recorded none were more highly enjoyed than swimming and the water sports. "A strong and vigorous Indian mother bearing her papoose upon her back, could tread water, standing almost erect, without distrubing the sleeping child with

even a drop of water. The little children swam like so many minnows.

Myths and Legends

Among the myths recorded in the Jesuit Relations, is a story of Manabozho, a mighty manito, who gave the gift of immortality to an Indian. The gift was tied in a bundle and Manabozho enjoined the Indian never to open it. The Indian's wife, however, impelled by curiosity, cut the string and the precious gift flew out, so the Indians ever since have been subject to death. "The Pottawatomies believed that Death was the wife of Satan and that she wore a robe made of the hair of her victims. It was she whom they sought to frighten away by drumming and stamping and shouting beside the sick bed.

Just as the lovely old German legend of the "Marianzwirn'—the thread from the Mother Mary's robe—is the story of the gossamer cobweb which, in the hazy October air, floats invisibly and brushing across the face, blesses him whom it touches; so, in the Indian legend, the cobweb was believed to be a hair from "Deaths" robe, and it betokened that the spirit of a friend had broken away from his captor, Death, and was safely arrived in the realm of Kitchi Manito.

Quite illogically the student of Indian literature and speech is surprised at the beauty and imagery of the Indian race, which, vitally dependent on nature, "sees God in the clouds and hears him in the wind".

Lew Sarett, the poet, a student of Indian life and speech, has sought to bring to us something of the Indian imagery. To give us examples of the naivete of speech—the simplicity, the broad but subtle humor, the tragedy, the wild crude beauty, which he tells us has been lost from Indian literature by the translators' sacrifice of metaphor for rhetorical elegance.

Sarett gives us "The Indian Sleep-song" for the little brown chief as he brings the sleepy wind to rock the bough of the willow and croon to the little brown leaf on the bough:

"Hush . . . . hush, hush!
My little brown fawn,
The now-flakes are falling—
The winter-men yawn;
They cover with white
Their children to-night,—
O little brown fawn,
Hush . . . . hush, hush!"

The characteristic note of sadness is noted in an Indian Love Song which closes with:

"Shivering wolf and lonely loon
Cry my sorrow to the moon—
O gone heart, O stone!"

The following, given in broken English, pictures the spirit of the snow:

"Sh . . sh . .sh! . . . Look, my frien'—somebody's dere'
Ain't? . . over dere? He's come from Land—of Winter!
Wit' quilt he's cover-um up dose baby mink,
Dose cub, dose wild arbutus, dose jump-up-Johnny . .
He's keep hees chil'ens warm for long, long winter . . .
Sh . . sh . . sh! Sombody's dere on de white savanne!
Somebody's dere! He's walk-um in de timber . . .
He's cover-um up hees chil'ens, soft . . . soft . . . "

Many of the Indian myths and legends told beside the lodge-fires on the reservations, were really nature stories. The story of the Fever-manito and the princess, modernized a bit, is a charming Pottawatomie myth of the marshland, of its flowers and of the miasma from the stagnant waters.

Once upon a time when all the world was new, the Fever-manito lay sleeping in his wigwam in the deep hot shade beside the stagnant waters of the marshland. Beside his doorway grew the largest of all the pitcher plants, for the Fever-manito was always thirsty and the pitcher plants, unless touched by mortal hands, were always filled with a deeply intoxicating beverage.

It so happened one day that a Pottawatomie princess, who worshipped Kitchi Manito, having placed her prayer sticks in order, chanted a prayer and went gaily forth along the trail, that followed the shore of the Sau-gan-seepe. Spying the deep red blossoms of the pitcher plant growing in the marshland, she left the trail—though she had been warned that the pitcher plant was taboo—and began to pick the blossoms. Then the princess heard a terrifying voice and saw, coming towards her, the dreaded Fever-manito. His blanket was miry, his eyes were bloodshot, his breath was like the scorching, blazing prairie fire, misery followed in all of his steps. The princess dropped her blossoms and fled swiftly towards the Indian village. As she ran she breathed a prayer to Kitchi Manito for help. After her stamped the angry fever god. Faster and faster ran the princess, faster and faster came the Fever-manito. Again she prayed her prayer for help and Kitchi Manito, having just returned from a far journey, granted her prayer by blessing the little moccasins on her flying feet.

In and out among the wigwams ran the princess, and in and out among the wigwams followed the Fever-manito. In every footprint of the princess there suddenly grew a low green herb; but on every low green herb stamped the crushing feet of the fever god. Round and round the village ran the princess; round and round the village followed the Fever-manito. Suddenly from the low growing green herbs, crushed by the

Fever-manito, there rose a pungent odor which became a vapor. It enveloped the princess and encircled the village. It suffocated the Fever-manito and, as he swooning fell, Kitchi Manito, in the form of a great white stag, rolled the Fever-manito up on a river mist and bore him swiftly to the marsh-land where the tall pitcher plants grew.

In appreciation of her rescue, the princess hung her little magic moccasins on a slender plant and to this day wherever the pitcher plant grows there may be found the moccasin plant with its lovely blossoms as a reminder of Kitchi Manito's care. And the crushed leaves of the low growing herb of the peppermint even now vanquishes the marshland's dreaded fever god.

The Indian story tellers taught by parables. The following story told in many versions by different tribes conveys its own warning.

There was a time when the valley of the Sau-gan-seepe was a level prairie land. In all its length and breadth there were neither rocks nor stones to obstruct the pathway of the hunters. The whole valley was a mass of flowers. One day a bit of the prairie land hearing much talk of his beauty, raised himself on his elbow that he might see himself in the mirror of the lake. This obstructed the view of hunters so they could not see the game and a quarrel ensued. A feud resulted and the hill, which had risen higher and higher to see himself, called a magician to turn him into something which would permanently hinder the hunters from seeing their game and would protect his friends, the deer.

The magician turned the hill into a steep stone mountain, but warned him never to feel angry. If he did find himself growing angry, instantly he was to make a wish. Moons passed by and all was peaceful along the Sau-gan-seepe. One day the stone mountain saw hunters coming, they were as fleet as the deer and were slaying them. Angered at the slaughter, the mountain cried: "I wish I could crush them!" Instantly he blew up. Far and wide flew his pieces and that is the way it happened that there are boulders, field stones and rocky places all over Michigan which form steep places where game may hide from the fleet footed hunters.

Ethnologists tell us that the literature of all nations, preserves in some version a story of the flood. The Pottawatomie version is recorded in the Jesuit Relations.

All Algonquin nations believed in Manabozho, the Great Hare, who was king of all the animals and possessed a marvelous court of quadrupeds.

He was believed to be a son of the West-wind and of the great-granddaughter of the Moon. It was he who restored the

world after it had been submerged in a deluge. Because Manabozho had killed a serpent, the lesser manitos, in rage, had, in the form of serpents, caused the waters of a lake to rise until all the world was submerged. Manabozho climbed a tree which, in answer to his prayer, grew as the floods rose around it and thus saved him.

Submerged to the neck, he looked abroad and spied the loon to whom he appealed for aid in restoring the world. The loon dived in search of a little mud but could not reach bottom. A muskrat made the attempt but reappeared, floating as if dead. Manabozho, however, discovered between the muskrat's paws, a particle of mud. This added to the body of the loon, was the material with which he recreated the world.

The specific words in which the Indian myths are given are often few, crude and inadequate but they represent keen observation and vivid imagination. The following is the Myth of the Falling Star retold with the imagery unchanged from the ten or twelve words of the original story.

In the high, high heavens there lived a lonely star who, when the hush of night brought friendly eyes looking earthward, found her own image glowing brightly in the heart of a quiet lake. He lay sleeping where giant pines stand sentinal. Quickly the star sped to the Council Grove of Kitchi Manito for permission to wed the quiet lake. But Kitchi Manito did not approve, would not listen. Pale and dim grew the star with weeping. Then, one day, in sudden anger at her persistance, Kitchi Manito dropped her, as a falling star into the arms of her lover, the lake, and now when the fragrant breath of summer steals over woodland and water, the lake and his bride may be recognized, for Kitchi Manito turned the pale little star into the wax-white water lily.

CHAPTER IV

NOTED INDIANS OF THE ST. JOSEPH VALLEY

The pride of birth and the love of ancestral homes is as deeply enshrined in the heart of the Indian as in that of his paler brother. The earliest records picture the Indian's intense love of the homeland of his fathers.

Following the old Indian trails across St. Joseph county to the former Nottawa Seepe reservation, of which Bennett's grove is a part, the Abiel Fellows Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, out on an historical pilgrimage, had as guest of honor Chief Samuel Manadoka and his family from Indian Town. After the basket dinner, Chief Manadoka, dressed in beaded buckskin clothes and moccasins and a huge feathered bonnet, told with true pride the story of the Pottawatomie nation which came from the northland to the St. Joseph; of the Three Fires federation who were brothers; of his father, who built the first hearth fire on the Nottawa Seepe reservation; of Marchia, a beautiful woman, renowned for her goodness, and as a doctor, greatly revered by the Indians of Athens because she cured by the laying on of hands.

Chief Manadoka spoke of Ponseekman, his father's sister, and then with eyes that betrayed a deeper feeling told of the service of his own sons overseas in the World war.

When asked what the word Pottawatomie meant, Chief Manadoka explained: "It means fiery ones, not elbow-out fiery but hearth-fire building fiery".

He explained that as a rule the Pottawatomie Indian men married between the ages of sixteen and twenty and the girls between fourteen and eighteen. Before the tribes were Christianized, the young man's parents purchased a wife, then she became at once his property, but usually he procured her by servitude. From time of purchase until the birth of the first child, neither the young brave nor his young wife had any possessions of their own. They both served the parents of the girl. At the birth of the child they set up housekeeping for themselves. The women of the entire village contributed to the new household. It was customary for each woman of the tribe to carry a huge armload of wood and assist in building the first hearth fire for the young couple. If later the young husband wished another wife, he usually took a sister of his wife "that there be no discord in the home". The mother had all care and training of the children.

Chief Manadoka told many interesting stories of life on the Nottawa Seepe reservation—of hunting, of their games of quoits, ball, moccasin, dice, lacrosse; explained the calendar

with its notches on a stick; and of observations based on the phases of the moon.

The day, filled with all the gaiety of an old fashioned picnic in the woods, culminated when in single file, each person doing his best to catch the quick, short step of the Pottawatomie chieftian who lead with his band of Indians the entire company marked the site of the old "Apple tree" ford. Each individual carried the largest stone he could find and deposited it on the growing stone pile. At the close of the ceremony Chief Manadoka said to the regent: "White woman thank red brother for good talk, red man thank white brother for good time, nobody thank the Father." The startled regent asked: "What would you do about it?" To which the chief promptly responded: "Me- I talk;" and swinging his long arms out, he stood the image of dignified reverence, while the laughing picnicers, surprised into silence and prayer, heard him simply, quietly, as one "face to face", tell "the Father" of the happy day, of the fine spirit in the heart of the white friends and of the gratitude in the heart of their red brother.

The old Nottawa Seepe reservation furnished many Indian celebrities, including the chieftain, Pierre Morreau, the polished Frenchman and his Indian wife; their son, Sau-au-kette, who usurped the places of the legitimate chiefs, Cush-ee-wees and Pee-quoit-ah-kiss-ee. At Sau-au-kette's death "Old John Ma-gua-go" became chief. He was followed by John Ma-gua-go, Jr. and he by Phineas Bamp-ta-na-by.

John Ma-gua-go had three sons, Man-do-ka, Mo-qua and Me-mie. Mar-chee-o-no-que was the chief's sister. She and her dusky daughter, Pont-sig-na, were considered very beautiful. "Mar-chee" married as her second husband, the furtrader, Capt. Hatch. Pont-sig-na was educated at Albion.

About 1840 the Methodist Episcopal church established a mission at the reservation, with Rev. Mannassah Hickey in charge. His sister assisted him. Mandoka's wife, Mary, was interpreter. She, also, had been educated at Albion. Rev. A. D. P. VanBuren, in his "Indian Reminiscences", vividly pictures the old mission and Rev. Hickey, with sonorous voice, speaking to the settlers. Then paragraph by paragraph, the sermon repeated in Mary's musical voice. "Of the two sermons, Mary's seemed the more effective because the Indians were the more gifted listeners". "From oldest patriarch to youngest child, their worship began the moment they entered the chapel."

Of the St. Joseph valley Indians, the settlers tell many stories. Among them, amusing ones about Chief Wee Saw, who seems to have been a man of parts. He had a village in Berrien county, farms in Kalamazoo, St. Joseph and Cass

counties. He was blest with three wives. In the spring he went to Prairie Ronde and from there directed the raising of corn in Kalamazoo county and vegetables in St. Joseph county then moved to the northwest in proper season for maple sugar. His hunting gounds in Volinca were visited every third year, allowing the intervals for the restoration of game. We Saw was a superb specimen, six feet four, muscular, dignified. He deemed himself every inch a king. He adored splendid attire: leggings bordered with little bells, head adorned with the most brilliant of turbans, waist with a gay sash; silver amulet, ear and nose rings. Sometimes he changed to a blue broad cloth coat and the effect was indeed marvelous. His favorite wife, a niece of Top-in-a-bee, was equally gorgeous in her attire. She was permitted to walk immediately behind him and ahead of the other two wives.

Head chief Top-in-a-bee died at Niles in 1826. He was a son of Aniqjuiba, whose village was near Niles. Top-in-a-bee was a hereditary title and probably the signature of Top-in-a-bee was made by different Indians who held the title of Top-in-a-bee. However, "Old Top-in-a-bee" of the Granville treaty, of the Chicago and later treaties, was all one and the same person. McCoy, the missionary, said of him in 1822: "Top-in-a-bee is upward of eighty years, a man of much nobility of character with unusual friendships for the whites." It was he who sent warning to Fort Dearborn of the intended massacre. After the signing of the Chicago treaty in 1821, he became hopelessly enslaved by alcohol. When General Cass urged him to keep sober that he might make better terms for his people, he replied: "Father, we do not care for land nor the money, nor the goods. What we want is whiskey. Give us whiskey."

A letter from the missionary in 1826 finished the brief biography of Top-in-a-bee:

"Poor old Top-in-a-bee is near his end. He fell from his horse and received such injury that he cannot live".

Top-in-a-bee was succeeded by Pokagon, second in rank to Top-in-a-bee. Pokagon's name was originally Sag-a-quick. After an Indian victory he became "Pokagon" who, as head of the St. Joseph valley Indians, led to victory against the invasion of the Shawnees from the Wabash.

Pokagon's son, Pokagon, Jr., was an educated Indian and when invited to take part in the anniversary celebration at Chicago in commemoration of the coming of Columbus, issued the "Red Man's Rebuke." His plea for his people was sent as his "regrets" for not attending the celebration. It is an oration worthy of a statesman. It was printed on white birch bark "In loyalty to my own people and gratitude

to the Great Spirit who gave a natural writing material that cannot be injured by sun or rain." The "Rebuke" is too long to quote in its entirety. Something of his style is indicated in: "And as the young nestling, while yet blind, swallows each morsel given by the parent bird, so drank we all they said.

"As the fear of the fox in the duckling is hatched, so the wrongs we have suffered are transmitted to our children".

In the closing paragraphs, Pokagon's denunciation reaches a climax as he pictures the white race before the Great Spirit on the Judgment Day. "He will hurl them headlong to that place where they may never touch, taste, handle, make, buy or sell the cup that doth damn a human soul."

The oration suggests the Talk by Chief Le Maigouis or the Trout, who spoke to his followers in the first person as the Great Spirit. He addressed them: "My Children". Stern indeed are his admonitions, scathing his denunciation of the "Children of the Evil Spirit". "They grew from the froth of the waters when troubled by the Evil One. The Froth was driven to our shores by a strong East Wind. They are numerous, unjust. They have taken. My Children—No Indian must sell rum to Indians. It makes him rich but when he dies he becomes very wretched. You bury him with his wealth and ornaments. Ashes grow along the path, they fall on him. He stoops to pick them up and they become dust. He arrives almost at the place of rest then crumbles into dust himself. But those who furnish themselves with necessaries only, when they die are happy and will find their wigwams furnished with everything they had on earth.

"I could not come to you myself, because the World is changed. It is broken and leans down, and as it declines, the Chippewas and all beyond will fall off and die. Therefore, you must come and see me and be instructed to prevent it. Those villages which do not listen to this talk and send me two deputies will be cut off from the face of the earth Forever."

Sau-ga-nash, the half breed chieftain, sometimes known as Billy Caldwell, a hero of Fort Dearborn massacre, is claimed as a St. Joseph county Indian, at least in his burial place beside the old Sac' war trail which once ran through the village of Eschol. His grave was located through the testimony of old settlers, who lived in the neighborhood when the chief was buried and the records were compiled by Mrs. H. P. Barrows, whose father's farm bordered the deserted village of Eschol. The Chicago Historical Society quite indignantly repudiates this claim and points to his grave in Illinois. Other old settlers claim the Indian buried at Eschol was Sau-ga-mow, or Sag-a-mon and buries Sau-ga-nash in Wisconsin. All are

united in a desire, however, to honor a man who gave his life in an endeavor to befriend his white friends. The grave was marked with a plain granite headstone by the Abiel Fellows chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution in 1916.

The Sau-ga-nash County Club, a part of the old Fitch farm, lies just across the river from the old chieftain's grave.

No sketch of St. Joseph county Indian life would be complete without a special mention of Wah-be-me-me, Chief White Pigeon, of the Pottawatomies, whose love for his friends of the prairie settlements, cost him his life and gave both city and township his name. The story is told that about 1830, Chief White Pigeon, while on a hunting expedition learned of the resentment of the Indians over depredations of the white man, that they had planned to attack the settlement on the prairie. Wah-be-me-me had smoked the pipe of friendship with these settlers and his warning has been voiced in a commemorative poem and issued as an official tribute to the red chieftain by the City of White Pigeon. The following is condensed from the last part of the poem:

"Louder, fiercer, sounds the war-cry,
Wilder, madder, grows the war-dance,
Firelight gleams on painted bodies—
Leaping, writhing, twisting, turning.
Wah-be-me-me, Chief White Pigeon,
Visions pale-faced friends who trust him.
Breathes an earnest, short petition,
Simple, childlike, fervent, heartfelt,
To the white man's God and Savior.
Then the voice of gentle Southwind
Comes to him from 'mong the branches,
Whispers gently as in answer:
"Redman ne'er betrays a friendship,
"Redman ne'er forgets a friend."
Swiftly vanishes the vision
From the heart of Wah-be-me-me
And as mists from off the meadow
Fades his dream of love and glory.
Quick he turns, and never faltering,
Bids farewell to Mich-e-wa-ka:
Leaves the camp upon the lake shore,
Leaves the nation of his fathers,
Leaves his love, his dream of glory.
Through the forests and the marshes,
Fording creeks and swimming rivers,
O'er the level, grassy prairies
O'er the barren, hilly uplands,

Wah-be-me-me rushes onward—
Never halting, never pausing,
Heeding neither thirst nor hunger.
Blind and deaf to all about him,
Save the impulse urging onward:
"Redman ne'er betrays a friendship,
Redman ne'er forgets a friend."
Panting, struggling, halting, stumbling,
Just as day's last glow is fading,
He draws near the white men's dwellings,
Sees them gathered 'round their campfires,
Hears their cheerful jest and laughter;
Fainting from his long exertion,
Reels into their midst, and tells them
Of their peril from the redman;
Tells them of his peoples' anger
Warns them to prepare for danger.
Then, his deed of love completed,
Gasping, sinks to earth before them.
Gently, tenderly, they raise him.
From his pale lips comes the whisper:
"Mich-e-wa-ka, truest sweetheart!"
Then, with one last mighty effort,
As his spirit wings its parting,
Breathes he once again the watchword
That sustained him on his journey:
"Redman ne'er betrays a friendship,
Redman ne'er forgets a friend."

Wah-be-me-me's grave, marked by the people of White Pigeon through the efforts of the Alba Columba Club, stands on the north side of U. S. 131 at the intersection with U. S. 112. The monument bears the inscription: "Wah-be-me-me, Chief White Pigeon". And on the base of the monument is the quotation: "Greater love hath no man than this, that he lay down his life for his friends."

Perhaps no more suitable conclusion to the chapter on St. Joseph County Indians may be found than that of "The Last Indian Council" featured by the White Pigeon Republican, in its issue of August 28, 1839. It is a picture of the last council of the Nottawa Seepe Indians with the United States Government. The Pottawatomie tribe had Red Bird, a chief, as spokesman, and the government was represented by Isaac Ketchum, the Indian Agent.

Red Bird was a splendid specimen of the Indian warriors. With calm assurance he greeted Mr. Ketchum: "Father: You have waited with patience for us to come to the council and most of us are now here. We are happy to meet you all well;

ourselves and our children are well. Today we have dry ground, bright sun, clear sky, and the Great Spirit be with us all. We are now ready to hear you and by ten o'clock tomorrow we will be ready to give answer."

Mr. Ketchum explained in detail the terms of the treaty; reminded them that they had signed away the reservation; that the government would take them, free of charge, to their homes in the west; He praised the land to which they were going, and closed by saying: "Your Great Father is determined to carry out his part of the treaty. It is hoped, therefore, that you will be willing to go. He knows that you will be better off on your own lands than here."

After much consultation, Chief Muchmote replied: "We have held our consultation with the three nations, and what you said to us does not please us at all. You told us that we must go west of the Mississippi. In our councils we have said we will not go and our minds have not changed. At council at Niles same question asked and we said we will not go. You wish to know when we would be ready to go. We say again, we will not go. We wish to die where our forefathers died. You say government protect. We say government protect on our way west and leave us there to our destruction. No one of us is daring to go. We are very poor. In the west there is no bark to build lodges. We not able to build houses like your white children. Many white people want us stay here. They hunt with us. We divide game. We stay here among white people. Therefore we not go."

Mr. Ketchum told the Indians that they were greatly mistaken about the white people wishing them to stay and to prove his assertion asked all the settlers present who wished the Indians to go to raise their hands—which everyone did. Again Mr. Ketchum pictured the benefits of the removal and urged them to reconsider.

Chief Red Bird closed the council: "Father, you have heard our decision, we shall never go. The reason the white people lifted hands is because they are afraid of you. We will never meet in council again. We will remain in the land of our sugar orchards, by shore of our rice fields and by the graves of our fathers."

When the soldiers came to enforce the treaty, many families of the Indians had escaped to Canada. Some of these, later, returned and purchased farm land near Athens, now called "Indian Town". Among them were the Pamp family and the Manadoka's.

CHAPTER V

TRAVELLERS OF THE THIRTIES

The difficulties which beset the traveller to St. Joseph county retarded settlement. Old letters in the possession of many of the early families tell of the hardships. A typical pen picture shows "a white haired patriach with head erect and firm step going steadily onward at the head of ox teams; stalwart sons and daughters undaunted by hardships guiding the ox teams; the younger children driving cattle or sheep or swine; and weary with the long tramp, trudged the pioneer mother, a child by the hand and a child in her arms."

Civic grandchildren of these women of the covered wagon days may well pay special tribute in this centennial year to the pioneer mothers. "They, who never faltered, though they walked with unsteady footsteps through privation and suffering. If the fortitude of the pioneer fathers opened the way through the wilderness, the abiding faith, courage and endurance of the mothers, sustained the family after the settlements were made."

People came to St. Joseph County by two great movements of immigration and the early population of the section is therefore varied. Settlers of St. Joseph county came directly through Ohio and Indiana and, in less numbers, from Kentucky and Tennessee—a great many from Virginia and Pennsylvania. The French traders came from Detroit.

The Carey Mission established on the St. Joseph river in 1822-23, under the direction of Governor Cass, was the result of his expedition to this region in 1820. Rev. Isaac McCoy from Fort Wayne had charge of the mission and it drew many settlers into southwestern Michigan. "The mission, the prairies, the Chicago trail and the water power were the combined influences which determined the first settlements and led the immigration along the "blazes." In 1827 at the first election held in White Pigeon, the county polled fourteen votes; four years later two hundred votes. Crawford county, Ohio, sent several families to the Grand Traverse and selected it as a most valuable mill site and in the next year opened a typical first store with codfish, a keg of tobacco and five barrels of whiskey as stock in trade."

In 1829 St. Joseph county was organized and local government established on the township system.

In "The St. Joes" by B. C. Kedzie, published in Volume 28 of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections, Mr. Kedzie writes of his boyhood life in pioneer Michigan "nine miles from a lemon and twenty-five from post office, doctor, and civilization."

He describes the United States Land Office at Monroe, and the settlers and speculators who frequented it, and from memory pictures the movers, their families and household gods and goods, always going west and always asking the directions for finding "St. Joe County." The Kedzies dubbed them the "St. Joes." A white covered wagon proclaimed their mission and destination. Twenty, forty a day the wagons filed past to the Canaan of the west. They were hardy, sober, honest. Rarely they travelled on Sunday, more rarely did they turn their faces east."

Mr. Kedzie tells of his home being over crowded with the St. Joes, sometimes forty would remain over night—dooryard, barnyard and lane were crowded. He tells of coming down the little Jacobs ladder one morning and noted four men lying side by side "packed as close as pickled herring," their heads resting on a bolster. "The four men, one after another, got up and stretched themselves into full wakefulness, and then the bolster got up and stretched into a man."

An article published in the Northwestern Journal, December 2, 1829, pictures the Ashael Savery, later the hero of the Chicago road: "Mr. Savary left this city last spring with his wife, two children, a hired man and a span of horses. He put up a block house on Pigeon prairie, fenced in a field of seventy-five acres and planted corn. He harvested a crop of three thousand bushels. He has paid the first cost of his land and expenses and has money in his pockets." With such glowing prospects were settlers urged to "at least try an exploring tour in the region of St. Joseph."

In the spring of 1829, with three yoke of oxen, and in company with the McInterfers, Abram and Molly Rickert came from Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, and "took up" the land lying south of present site of Three Rivers. Abraham Rickert was born in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, in 1782; married Mary M. Engle, 1810. They had seven children: Leonard, b. 1811; Catherine, Abraham Jr., Mary, Samuel, Jacob and Abner b. 1829 near Mottville.

CHAPTER VI

SETTLEMENTS

White Pigeon

From 1830 the population increased steadily until White Pigeon became a center of over eight hundred people and in 1831, the government established a new land office. The village was laid out in 1829. It had three saw mills and two grist mills and was considered a center of enterprise. Many are the stories concerning "land sharpers" and "shavers." Immigrants were warned by the early newspapers not to purchase land through agents. Several villages were platted. The two serious checks in the thirties to the tide of immigration came, first from the cholera and second from the Black Hawk war, though the latter fortunately, in St. Joseph county, was only a scare.

In April, 1830, the first town-meeting was called at Savery's "Old Diggins"—mine-host one of the most picturesque characters which early Michigan produced.

A part of "Old Diggins" was built in 1827-'28, and in its long log-hewn bar room the wheels of government for St. Joseph county were set in motion. Here in 1830, the Hon. William Woodbridge and Henry Chipman, presiding judges, held court. The old tavern occupied the site of the present White Pigeon high school.

Some Pioneers of 1830

Adams, Dr. Isaac O.; Beadle, Mishael, Flowerfield; Buck, George, (Sturgis prairie); Cade, Thomas, Sherman; Calhoun, Andrew, Florence township; Clark, Robert Jr., Centerville; Coffinberry, J. W., White Pigeon; Connor, Fletcher, McMillan (who opened the first farm land on Nottawa prairie); Crawford, Robert and Mary Shannon, Constantine; Crawford, James; Engle, James, N. Y., to Burr Oak; Engle, Jonathan, Nottawa; Engle, Thomas and Sarah (Rynerson), Nottawa; Fitch, Charles B., Ohio to White Pigeon; Lothrop, Edwin H., Massachusetts to Prairie Ronde; Laird, Glover and wife, New York to Nottawa; Parker, John and Elizabeth (Leiser), Pennsylvania, New York to Sturgis; Hatch, A. T., Colon (Indian trader married Marchess Maqua); Jones, DeGamo, Sturgis; Lancaster, Columbia, Constantine; Langley, Thos. W., 1830 or 1831. First Register of Deeds, first postmaster, Centerville. Six sons, one daughter. "Laid most of the corner stones for the public buildings of Centerville;" Lawrence, Andrew, Florence township; Parker, John, Sturgis; Raymond, Oliver, Sturgis; Rhoades, Orrin, Rhoades, Lewis, came to Monroe in 1795, to White Pigeon; Savey and Lancaster, at-

torneys at White Pigeon; Trumbull, Edward A., Deputy U. S. Marshall of W. Michigan; Wheeler, Challenge S., Flowerfield; Wheeler, William, Flowerfield. (See history of Episcopal church); St. Joseph Methodist Mission for the first time appears in the general minutes as a part of the Ohio Conference and in 1830 the pastor was Erastus Felton; Sellers of 1830-1831; Schellhouse, Cyrus, Nottawa; Schellhouse, George, Colon; Schellhouse, Lorenzie, Colon; Schellhouse, Martin G., Colon; Shellhouse, Roswell, Colon.

Nottawa and the Black Hawk Scare

In 1830 Amos Howe accompanied by William Hazzard, Hiram A. Hecox, Samuel McKee and William Conner, came to St. Joseph county, sowed wheat in September and then returned the following year with their families.

The first log house erected in the township of Nottawa was built in 1830 on the farm of William Hazzard, near Centerville. It was only 18x18 and for several weeks was the residence not only of the Amos Howe family but also of the Connors, Hazzards, McKees, Lanes, Hecox, Ingalls, Shermans, Powers, Posts and the Dr. McWilliams.

The organization of Nottawa was accomplished in 1832 and the first town meeting was held at the residence of Captain Henry Powers when Amos Howe was elected to that most impressive office within the gift of the early settler—a Justice of the Peace.

Mr. Howe has written for the Pioneer Society of Michigan most interesting stories of the "early days" of that period when the Sauk Indians west of the Mississippi tried to induce the Pottawatomies to "rise" against the settlers but the Pottawatomies of lower Michigan were hearth-fire lovers rather than warriors.

In his history of the United States, Bill Nye pictures the Black Hawk War of 1832 as the time of "scalping the inhabitants between soup and the remove," and explains that "it grew out of the fact that the Sacs and Foxes sold their lands to the United States and afterward regretted that they had not asked more for them; so they refused to vacate until several of them had been used up on the asparagus beds belonging to the husbandman."

Far less facetious are some of the squatter's stories of the Indian uprising as told from one cabin to another in St. Joseph county's first "whispering campaign."

Among the names listed as soldiers at the time were Ashael Savery, Major S. P. Williams, Capt. Calhoun, John Hamilton, George Thurston, Deacon Forbes, John Hartman. The latter was working on a millstone when the message came,

he dropped his hammer and was off for war. John W. Fletcher. Wm. H. Cross, Wm. Langley, Charles Monroe, Michael Beadle, Adna A. Hecox, Edgar A. Trumbell and others hastened to enlist.

At a meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, Mr. Cross paid tribute to the pioneer women of this period. Mr. Cross said: "When the word came to shoulder our rifles on that May day in 1832, our family found itself just moving on a new farm. The oldest settler not having been a resident five years, there were twice as many Indians as white men and the prospect of nine tenths of the men going to war, gave a gloomy outlook. Then came the question from the wives and mothers and sisters: "But, do you have to go", and when we in turn asked: "Would you ask us to shirk our duty and let others go", the reply was worthy of the women of those days: "No,go, we will do the best we can."

Two months before the so called uprising, Mr. Cross had married and brought his nineteen year old bride to the wilderness. "What am I to do", I asked and promptly came the reply: "Go, you must bear your share, I will do the best I can".

The Hon. William Connor of Nottawa, gives the following description of the settler's fort: "The contemplated site of Ft. Hogan was on the lands of J. Foreman, in the northeast corner of Colon. For its erection, a file of one dozen men was appointed each day to work upon the fortifications. On the very first day, after a trench had been partially dug and two loads of stumps drawn to the spot, the sun shone with such intense heat that the workmen grew tired, handsomely cussed the Sauks and regarding discretion the better part of valor, abandoned the enterprise.

"The committee which was appointed to draw the plans for Ft. Hogan, included Amos Howe, Rev. Mr. Alvord and Dr. McWilliams. They drew the ground plan for the square fort which, covering five acres and earth two feet high, topped with grubs, fortunately was never completed."

Col. Jonathan Engle often laughingly declared he had received but one scratch during the war and that was by the government pen, which gave him 160 acres for a month's uneasiness.

Another volunteer, Hiram Jacobs, said he was ordered out in May. Had dashed for Niles one day and dashed for home the next.

Walter G. Stevens, who came to White Pigeon in 1829, said that doubtless he would be called a tramp now. He had heard so much about Michigan in his old Virginia home that he just had to come and see it. So, afoot and with two dollars for emergencies, he started on the long lonesome journey. One

night, with frosted corn which he had toasted in a blacksmith's forge, as his only food, he decided to tell his story to 'Savery at Old Diggins' and ask for food.

When he entered the tavern, Savery was pouring toddy and came from behind the bar, looking so sternly at the hungry boy that he was "nigh ready to drop". Satisfied by his scrutiny, Savery said: "You look honest" and added, "When the breakfast bell rings go in and eat your fill. Stay until you are able to pay."

Mr. Stevens was one of the first to respond to the call for troops. As a reward he received a quarter section, money and blankets for a month's service. Later he helped build the Centerville jail and served as jailer. He told amusing stories of his courtship, his walk of ten miles after the day's work to call on his sweetheart. His fortune on his wedding day consisted of two dollars and courage. One dollar, however, was given to John S. Barry to perform the wedding ceremony.

Concerning the causes of the Black Hawk War, Amos Howe writes: "The very suggestion of an Indian uprising filled the settlers with alarm; the reports were heightened by the stories told by the fun loving Frenchman, Navarre of Godfroys' Landing Post, who, it is said, never left a stone unturned in the line of humor if he could witness the fear and excitement of his Yankee neighbors." Others claim that the stories were originated by the squatters who longed for the rich prairie lands of the Indian reservations. They prodded both the Indians and the white men into trouble that the government might have cause for the removal of the Indians.

The frightened settlers appointed their committee of safety: Martin C. Schellhouse, Jonathan Engle, Sr., Benjamin Sherman, Amos Howe and Alvin Alvord, Sr.

Undoubtedly the most dominating figures in St. Joseph county during the Black Hawk trouble were Martin G. Schellhouse and his brothers. Through their kindly common sense, fears on both sides were allayed.

An incident, a near tragedy at the time, but now an enjoyable story, is told of a New England family, who had but recently settled on Sturgis prairie. In order to preserve their valuables, consisting of plate, china, mirrors and other prized possessions, which could not be taken with them in hasty flight, they carefully packed the goods in a large box and in the dead of night stealthily gathered around a dry well by their cabin. With low whispers the well rope was attached to the box, the windlass having been freshly rubbed with soft soap that no tell-tale creak might reveal their work. The men seized the crank and steadily lowered the box, when suddenly the rope broke and with the crash of a cannon the box struck

bottom and shattered its contents to atoms. Shrieks from the women arose on the midnight air, the alarm was sounded along the prairie, shriek after shriek. The prairie was awake and deeming the Sac warrior at their very door, there was a general flight.

Salathiel Coffenberry's Story

The most authentic account of the Pottawatomies of St. Joseph is undoubtedly that written by Salathiel C. Coffenberry for the Western Chronicle of 1858. Mr. Coffenberry was a pioneer who was highly respected by the settlements, so much so that Three Rivers' Masons named their chapter for him. We quote Mr. Coffenberry as one whose story would deal squarely with both red men and white. Mr. Coffenberry says: "Notwithstanding that the settler found himself surrounded with thousands of acres of the most fertile lands, obtainable for ten shillings per acre, he envied the Indian his little home of twelve square miles. In vain the chiefs in council said: "You have much, we have little, why you want our little?" But the settlers importuned, became unpleasant, annoying, and the Indian patiently submitted.

"On the south bank of St. Joseph river, Patrick Marannette had established himself a trading post. He exerted an almost absolute control over the Indians and his sincere aim was their prosperity and happiness. He indignantly inveighed against the inhumanity of those who introduced the liquor which turned the Indians into fiends and, as they formed the taste for it reduced them to groveling poverty, imbecility and wretchedness.

"At the commencement of the first settlement of St. Joseph county in 1829 or '30, the Nottawa bands of Pottawatomies acknowledged the sway of Pierre Morreau as chief. He was a white man, an educated and accomplished Frenchman and because of some misfortune he sought a secluded retreat. He married an Indian woman, adopted Indian costume and habits. As a savage, he was more to be feared than the red man.

Morreau, by his Indian wife, had seven children: Sau-au-quette, the wicked, Moniss, Isadore and Wau-be-gah. His daughters were Betsey, Min-no-wis and Min-nah. Sau-au-quette, shrewd, wicked, wily, displaced his father and disputed the right to govern with Cush-ee-wes, the legitimate chief whose father, deceased, had been supplanted by Morreau.

Sau-au-quette possessed remarkable powers as an orator. Cush-ee-wes was modest and retiring. Each had his followers but all of the Indians admitted the rightful claim of Cush-ee-wes. However, Sau-au-quette invariably won out. He was

extraordinary in appearance, six feet, three inches tall, straight, finely proportioned, possessing an imposing and withal winning address. The tribe had been steadily deteriorating, they had ceased to hunt or trap, they had traded guns and ponies for whiskey; they hung around the post insisting, begging for more "fire water," more whiskey.

"At this crisis came the Black Hawk war scare. It is not to be wondered at that the settlers were alarmed. Panic seized them, goods and valuables were concealed, cattle sold at half their value, crops left ungathered. Amid all the alarm, there were some in the settlement that could not be persuaded that the settlement was in danger, among them the venerable Judge Sturgis, Martin G. Schellhouse and his brothers, and several others. However, the militia was organized for deadly conflict and, flushed with the glory of their mission, marvelous were the hair breadth escapes of the soldiers which were told to the frightened settlers.

"Among the stories was that of Min-no-wis, sister of Sau-au-quette who had been detected in stealthily approaching the cabin of a settler to ascertain by espionage the strength of the white enemy. It was in vain she pleaded that her children were starving and that she only had come to beg a bit of bread. In vain she said she was afraid of the white man and was trying to see his wife, who would, as a mother, perhaps pity her children and give her a bit to eat. With tears streaming from her eyes she offered her baby's little moccasins for food. "No good if squaw can buy no bread."

Among those who pleaded for the Indian as a friend was Col. Sherman, for whom a township of St. Joseph county is named. Col. Sherman's talk at the white man's council is worth reading. He said in part:

"I have as good a knowledge of the disposition of the Nottawa Indian as any one. I do not believe there is the least danger from them; the poor cusses are more scared than we. But if you must have a man go to Niles, though it is on a fool's errand, give me your dispatches, I'll be off." "Arm yourself well, Sherman", said one. "Take my horse pistols" said another. The dispatches were sent. The next day began the building of Fort Hogan."

Again, we quote Coffenberry: "Cyrus Schellhouse in the meantime stole away to the reservation. He found the Indians destitute and laboring under the impression that their white neighbors, taking advantage of the Black Hawk excitement, were planning an attack. After a brief parley with the Indians an interview was planned at the home of Captain Powers. "Cush-ee-wes, with an interpreter, accompanied Cyrus Schellhous. Cush-ee-wes offered his hand in token of

friendship to the doughty captain and stood with unaffected dignity before the fidgety commander. "What does the white man want? He has sent for his red brother. Let pale face speak." "We want to know what we have done to induce you to try to cut our throats and scalp our people," demanded Captain Powers. "Pale face does not speak words of wisdom or he would not ask what red man has done, but would ask what pale face has done," replied Cush-ee-wes.

And then there followed an eloquent plea for his people; he pictured their loss of land, their distress through the white man's influence and to the arraignment he demanded that the white man answer. After many inquiries, it was found that the only Indians off from the reservation were the young warriors who had gone with the fur trader, Captain Hatch, to fight for the white people.

Col. Sherman returned from Niles with the welcome news of Black Hawk's capture. All of the old newspaper article by Mr. Coffenberry is worth reading. His intensely human story closes with the query: "What did the red man receive from the white man and his civilization in exchange for the home land of his fathers?"

Centerville, A Centenarian

Among the villages taking their civic places in the county in the early thirties, was Centerville. It was platted in 1831 and on November 22 the governor's proclamation located the county seat there. It was platted by Robert Clark, Jr., Electra W. Deane, Charles Noble and D. B. Miller. A bronze tablet indicates the site of the first courthouse. The inscription reads:

"1832 — 1842
Site of the first St. Joseph County
Court house in Centerville.
Authorized by Territorial Governor
George B. Porter.
First Judge William Fletcher.
Marked by the Abiel Fellow Chapter D. A. R."

Concerning the first court sessions held in Centerville, Chester Guerney, a learned, rather cynical old lawyer, when asked about the first court sessions replied: "Like the Irish witness who testified in court that he had known the gun in question ever since it was a pistol, I have known about the court and its first sessions in Centerville. In the early days when our circuit court went pioneering, it held session in the little frame building built by Langley for a store but used by Sam Scott, grocer. Mr. Guerney characterized Thomas Langley, the builder of the store, as a man of ready speech, quick imagina-

tion and action, a man of great courtesy of manner. Langley built the first tavern in the village and in Langley's eyes it was a feudal castle and he it's lord, whose highest ambition was to entertain every guest with knightly cheer."

Several years ago Mrs. F. H. Coon compiled from the St. Joseph County History, for the D. A. R., the data covering the early courts of Michigan from which the following is quoted:

"The first term of circuit court held in Centerville was called October 21, 1833, and was held by Hon. W. A. Fletcher, Circuit Judge.

"The first divorce case on the calendar was during the October term of 1833, when Aurora Amulet Gilbert complained most bitterly of the cruel desertion by her lawfully wedded lord and master, David Gilbert, and meekly stated that if the court didn't want to take her word, they might just inquire for themselves. But the court believed Aurora for at the April term in 1835, they decreed that David should no longer have his Aurora Amulet to charm his cares away and bade her resume her maiden name.

"The first court of record ever held in St. Joseph county was a session of the probate court held at the office of the Register of Probate, John W. Anderson in White Pigeon on Friday, March 26, 1830, five months after the county was organized. It was held by Dr. Hubbel Loomis, Probate Judge, granting letters of administration to Elizabeth Thurston on the estate of Amos Codner. August 23, 1830 the first will was probated in the county; that of John Baum, deceased.

"The first probate court held in Centerville was on October 24, 1834.

"The Circuit court of St. Joseph county held its first term August 17, 1830 at Savery's Old Diggins in White Pigeon. The first foreign born applicant for citizenship to be accepted for citizenship in the county was at this meeting. His name was William Johnson and he came from Berwickshire, England.

In October 1837, the first of the bank suits appeared in the Circuit Court. In the September term of 1838, Daniel Fulton was indicted for "exercizing secular labor" on the Sabbath Day but a jury of his neighbors acquitted him of the charge.

At the first meeting of the county court at Savery's in White Pigeon in 1830, a seal for the county was ordered with the following device and inscription: "A sheaf of wheat, a merino sheep and a pair of scales and the inscription was "St. Joseph County Seal."

In 1830 the commissioners appointed to investigate a suitable location for the county seat reported favorably on its

location on the plat by George Buck of the village of St. Joseph—now second ward—Three Rivers. Mr. Buck and Jacob McInterfer were to donate the lots. Because of misunderstanding the report was set aside and a new commission consisting of Thomas Rowland, Henry Desborn and George A. O'Keefe recommended the site of Centerville, which was formally proclaimed on November 22, 1831.

"The first court rooms at Centerville were furnished by the supervisors and were in the upper story of the first frame house built in Centerville.

In May 1832, it was voted to build a jail and the first man incarcerated was committed without formality by Sheriff Taylor. The door was closed but not locked. The prisoner was forgotten. When looked for, the jailor found his tenant gone but at night the prisoner returned of his own free will and offered twenty-five cents to be allowed to sleep there again.

The old jail did service for twenty-one years. August 14, 1854 it burned and one of the three prisoners there at the time lost his life. It was supposed he had set fire to the building. The old jail lock weighed twenty-five pounds and was a most ingeniously wrought combination made by E. C. White, village blacksmith and gunsmith of high repute. Long years afterwards the huge key to the old jail was an interesting curio in the collection belonging to Dr. A. W. Scidmore in Three Rivers.

The late Elias S. Swan of White Pigeon served the first legal process issued from Court of Record in the territory now constituting St. Joseph County. This was about 1828. He was then deputy sheriff of Wayne County. In 1831, Mr. Swan located at White Pigeon and brought the first stock of goods up the St. Joseph river from its mouth where they had been landed on the lake shore from Buffalo. His goods were brought in batteaux propelled by poles as far as Hartman's Landing, about a mile from the present site of Mottville (on the land later owned by Charles Fox) and from there toted overland to White Pigeon.

The following letter, written by the Hon. Columbia Lancaster from Vancouver, Washington Territory, August 10, 1887, was published in the Michigan Historical collections.

"Hon. S. D. Bingham, Lansing, Michigan.

"Sir: My name is Columbia Lancaster; I was born in New Milford, Connecticut, August 26, 1803; occupation an attorney; politics, a democrat (copper-fastened).

"I came to Michigan in August, 1830; remained at White Pigeon until the county seat was located at Centreville; erected the first dwelling and became the first citizen of Centreville.

"The territory of Michigan filled rapidly with good citizens . . . When Michigan was robbed of its ten mile strip . . . and a territorial military organization was effected I was made a colonel. When the state constitutional conventions were called, I was delegate to Ann Arbor. I was elected to the Legislature in 1837 or '38 (1838).

"In March, 1837, (probably 1839) with my wife and daughter, four years old, I left Michigan with an ox team for Oregon and reached Oregon City September 15.

"November 30, 1847, I was appointed Supreme Judge of Oregon Territory and was afterwards sent to Oregon's second legislature and was her first delegate in Congress (Democratic).

* * * * * * *

"I am pleased with this country but I cannot keep my mind away from Michigan and her noble system of education, the best the world produces. . . . In imagination I sit down in Centreville and all her incidents of early history pass in a grand panorama before me. But my old friends have emigrated to celestial regions and I shall follow soon.

Very truly,
(Signed) Columbia Lancaster.

In that quality of citizenship which ranks greater than riches—the spirit of appreciation for sacrifice and heroism—Centerville ranks among the highest in the county. A grey granite monument surmounted by a soldier on guard pays tribute to the loyal sons of 1861 and also stands as a memorial to the St. Joseph county men who served in Mexico, Company E, 15th U. S. Infantry, under Capt. I. D. Toll.

The county is indebted to the Hon. Frank S. Cummings for his interest in obtaining this public recognition and remembrance of the courageous old Company E whose heroic story is told in another chapter. Mr. Cummings is a son of Soloman Cummings, pioneer, and he is entitled to credit for his splendid work through the St. Joseph County Pioneer Society in salvaging valuable historical material from oblivion.

Leonidas

The first settlement in Leonidas was made in 1831 by the fur trader, Thomas Hatch who married, first, Marchee-o-no-qua, the sister of Chief Maguago. Other settlers were the George Matthews who came from New York city and located near the St. Joseph river bridge in the vicinity of the trading post. Many stories are told of the Matthews family, among them that of an intoxicated Indian whooping and yelling who came to the Matthews cabin and decided to stay. Matthews was very sick with ague, but when the Indian refused to leave,

Matthew's spirit rose higher than his fever, he pulled the Indian from his pony and severely slapped his face. A few days later the Indian returned with many others and demanded that because Matthews had insulted him when drunk now he must fight when he, the Indian, was sober. Mrs. Matthews fearing something wrong slipped a hunting knife under her apron and went along. Suddenly whipping out a knife, the Indian said: "Now we fight with knife." Promptly Mrs. Matthews handed over her hunting knife and the surprised Indians with him shouted "Ugh, squaw!" and applauded her, "Chemokeman", as they called his "squaw", and the Indians were ever after good friends.

Leonidas is rich in folk stories of the pioneers and of their ancestors who fought for American independence: Allen Wing, William Hobart, Jabiel Sherwood, Zachariah Watkins, Chapman Davis, Nathaniel Watkins, Shadrich Pierce, Peabody Kinne, Benjamin Clark, of Captain Isaac Conklin and Wakeman Foster, stories by the Kibbes, Bishops, Hodges and others. The story of Mark Watkins, buried in Leonidas cemetery, is told in the chapter on St. Joseph's Roll of Honor.

Escaped From the Red Coats

It was Wakeman Foster who was compelled by British soldiers to hitch his yoke of oxen to a flat bottomed boat which the Red Coats coveted and requested to have transported overland to the Peconic Bay, which was about three miles distant. We are told that Foster was a praying man but with expletives as strong as his orthodox christianity would permit, he proceeded leisurely with his task to threats from the impatient soldiers. The road was obscure and darkness fell. Foster suggested that he lead the way. The British soldiers consented. They were weary and the oxen for some reason were hitting a wonderful gait. With many "whoas" and "gees" and "haws" the impatient yoke and driver when entering a particularly dark place, vanished out of sight of the British into a dense forest. Foster's "whoas" increased as he was vanishing until the breakneck speed of the oxen lost his voice to his captors. Foster had been shouting "whoa" but with a sharpened stick had been prodding "go".

Colon

(Compiled by Miss Emma Price for the D. A. R.)

This township, which takes its name from the village within its limits, has within its boundaries an eminence which is called Colon Mountain, not remarkable for its elevation, though it is the highest point in the township, 120 feet above

the general level. It is supposed to have been made by the mound builders.

"Roswell Schellhouse came from Ohio in 1829 to Nottawa Prairie and located on what was afterward included in Colon township. He built a log house of two rooms, which he kept as a hotel for some years. His location was on Section Six.

"Loransi Schellhouse, a brother of Roswell, came into the township in 1830, as did George F. and Martin G., two other brothers, and bought land on sections three and six, Loransi buying the mill site on Swan Creek where the present flouring mill is now situated in the village. These persons above named were the first settlers in the territory included in the present bounds of Colon.

"Charles Palmer came in from Ohio in 1831 and bought 300 acres east of the creek.

"The civil organization of the township occurred in 1836 at which time Colon was limited to its present area and is known on the government surveys as Township six, south of range nine west. The village was projected 1832.

"The first marriages in the township were those of Jonothan Engle Jr. and Delia Brooks in 1832; Reuben Trease and Sally Rumsey, August 13, 1834.

"Among the early settlers, Comfort and Job Tyler came in 1832. Alvin Hoyt and Hopper in 1832 and also Abel Belote. The Schellhouses and Dr. Mitchell were natives of Vermont. The Tylers, Farrands, Henry K. (1836) with Phineas and their father (1838). Dr. A. J. Kline (1831). The Bowers, Adams, William and father, John, William H. Castle (1835), Charles L. Miller (1841) and Dr. McMillen (1834) were New Yorkers. Stebbins, Brooks, Noyes (1831) and Chaffee (1835) were from Ohio. The Scholfields and Louis A Leland (1833) from Massachusetts. Eberhards, Wagners, Dr. Voorheis (1836), John H. Bowman (1839), from Pennslyvania. Danburys, Tellers, Van Vorsts, Mohawk Valley. Levi Matthews (1832) Connecticut. David King and family were English. The Clipfells (1839) from Alsace and the Borns and Engles from near French border.

"The first death was the first white child born therein, a son of Roswell Schellhouse, in the summer of 1830. First adult Mrs. Schellhouse, 1832. First burial in Colon cemetery was Emily Noyes, aged 8 years, 1832, the year the cemetery was first laid off.

"The first schoolhouse was built in 1833 on the Brooks farm, and Martin G. Schellhouse was the first teacher therein —1833-34.

"The first merchant in the township was Louis A. Leland, who settled in 1836 on section ten (the old Noyes homestead)

to which Samuel Noyes and his family of daughters came from Ohio in 1821. Louis A Leland married Mary Ann Noyes. Mr. Leland first carried his stock of goods in a wagon, traveling from Bronson to Centerville, and permanently located in Colon in 1836, retailed his goods from his house.

"Charles L. Miller was the first merchant to open a stock of goods for retailing in the village. Mr. Miller was elected Judge of Probate in 1856 and was secretary of the commission on commerce of the United States from 1861 until his death.

"E. Hill and Sons commenced in the mercantile trade in the village in 1851 and until 1868 were leading merchants, doing a heavy trade. The Exchange Bank of E. Hill and Sons was organized in 1878.

"Dr. Isaac Sides opened the first drug store in 1859. Dr. Isaac Voorheis was the first physician, locating in the village in 1836. Another early doctor was Dr. James Fisher, of New York, who located there in 1832 on the prairie near the trader Hatch's place. A son of Dr. Fisher, born in Colon, distinguished himself in the United States navy. Dr. McMillan practiced for a time after he came into the township in 1834.

"The Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in Colon township in the year 1844 by the formation of a class of 16 members by Ryan Williams and Aaron Bradley (who moved into the township the previous year), with Ryan Williams as class leader. Ryan Williams, Mrs. Ryan Williams, Aaron Bradley, Samuel Sheik, Mrs. Barber Mills, Mrs. James Palmer, Mr. Washburn. The board of trustees for the society was elected August 18, 1856 with Phineas Farrand, William H. Harper, William F. Bowman, Solomon R. Salisbury, Ellis Hughes, Gilbert Liddle and Moses Blanchard as members of such board. John W. Lovett has long been an active worker as Sunday School Superintendent.

"This society was formed in 1840 by Rev. Daniel Crow in School District No. 5. First members being John Yeatter, Michael Yeatter, Peter Miller, Adam Decker, John Fogleman, John D. Everhard, Elias Ware, John A. Ultz, Daniel Rich, Peter Wagner. John D. Everhard was from Pennsylvania. A brick edifice costing $3000 was erected in 1844.

"Colon Baptist Society was first organized in Leonidas (as found by records kept in an unbound book) in 1837 by Elders Brown of Centerville, Taylor from Prairie Ronde and G. B. Day of Sturgis. First members of organization were: E. G. Terry, Daniel Franklin, Orrin Legg, Sarah Legg, Mary Vaughn, Experience Watkins, Enoch S. Gersline, Benjamin Blossom, Joseph Gilbert, Constant Vaughn, Armilla Terry, Justus W. Denton, Eli Denton, Lurelia Denton, Clarissa S.

Denton, Mary Reynolds, Sally Reynolds, Anna Gilbert, Clarissa Blossom.

"An edifice was built in 1845, the society being incorporated January 20th of that year. The first trustees were Orrin W. Legg, Loransi Schellhouse and Seth Goodwin, John Gray, Benjamin Blossom, William Grover and Mr. Rowe.

In the Christian Herald of 1886, Rev. L. H. Trowbridge wrote: "Southern Michigan never knew livelier times than during the first decade of its settlement. Sherman township comprised a tract of 3,000 acres and, although the land office was at Monroe and the early settlers had to make the distance on horseback, it was counted no hardship, for all were in the freshness of youth—strong, hopeful, happy.

"Holidays were not numerous but were great occasions when they did occur, winding up usually with a barbecue. In 1828, the year following Mr. Thurston's settlement on the prairie, a bear was killed in the locality and the novel announcement followed of a "Bruin Barbecue". Among those present on this occasion was Governor Cass with his staff on their way to Niles to settle with the Indians for the purchase of their lands. In the governor's train were eight ponies, four laden with silver, the purchase price, and four with 200 pounds each of ginghams, calicos and fancy notions for presents. The governor was given shelter but his "staff" camped out of doors.

"The influx of immigration increased until 1836 when settlers came by tens and hundreds. In the spring of this year Abel Crossman and Gersham B. Day of Kempville, Niagara County, N. Y. entered land in Nottawa. They were the leaders of the second colony that settled in Sherman, made up of Wear Drake, wife and son Addison, Mr. and Mrs. Stephen H. Chase, Abel Crossman and family, James M. Tefft, M. D., John Harris, Nathaniel Cutter and Thomas Davis.

"Up to this date every man knew his neighbor and neighbors were not limited by township or county lines. Some of the familiar names were: Thomas Cade, settled in Sherman, 1830; David Petty, David and Charles Knox, 1831; John S. Barry, White Pigeon, 1831; Dr. Elliott, 1832; Caleb Arnold and his father's family in Constantine, 1832; Norman Roys of Florence, 1832.

"John Landrick, in 1833, was the genial, jolly stage driver between Detroit and Chicago and for more than half a century was one of the wealthy men of the prairie. For first class accommodations by coach, passengers paid seven cents a mile with the privilege of a rail to pry the stage coach out of

the mud. General Brown of Tecumseh and DeGarmo Jones of Detroit owned the line, increasing facilities by 'extras' year by year until the coach run daily, reluctantly giving place to the Lake Shore and Michigan Southern railroad in 1851.

Second class transportation in these earlier days was slow and no springs. One of the original contracts reads:

"The undersigned agrees to transport in lumber wagon without springs, ten persons for $40 from Detroit to Constantine." At this date Constantine was the Chicago of Southern Michigan, being the head of navigation.

"While passengers travel was brisk by stage, freighting was lively by the lakes and the St. Joseph river. In fact, the first bridge at Constantine was a swing bridge. Lima, Indiana and all surrounding towns received their freight at this point via lake and river. The river arks which were 40 by 60 feet were covered with two inch white oak plank and calked with tow and slippery elm bark. They required great skill in handling. The famous old arking captains and their hair breadth adventures were subjects of many an evening's entertainment. Keel boats made their appearance in 1835. One of the musical names of these vessels was the "Kitty Kiddungo."

Sturgis

In the saga of St. Joseph county pioneers, the coming of John Sturgis and George Thurston is a most dramatic episode. John and Ardillacy Sturgis first came to Michigan Territory in 1818. In 1827 Mr. Sturgis came northwest from his Ohio home, accompanied by George Thurston, a boy of nineteen years. They brought with them oxen, a plow, seed and provisions. They made their way through forests by the Indian trails until they came to land belonging to General Cass (now Sturgis Prairie) and there they broke the first prairie land which is now within St. Joseph county. George Thurston turned the first furrow. We are told they garnered twenty five tons of hay that first season. Then came a prairie fire that swept it all in flames. Discouraged, they returned to their Ohio homes, but being men of energy and of faith in the beautiful prairie lands of Michigan, returned the next season, accompanied by the Sturgis family, and began again. Of Thurston, it is written that in five years after coming to St. Joseph county, he assisted in raising eighty-six houses. Among them the first house in Kalamazoo county, that of Judge Harrison, the first settler of that county. It is recorded that "the neighborhood" went over to where the house was to be raised one day, did the work and returned the next day. Thurston's

father served in the War of 1812 and his grandfather fought in the American Revolution.

Much has been written of the Sturgis family, especially of John Sturgis, for whom General Cass named the prairie. He first located in what is now Fawn River, two years later moved to Nottawa and entered 240 acres of government land. He was a most important personage in his day, and eventually became the owner of 1400 acres of land. He was the father of ten children: William, Jane, Catherine, John, George, Amos, David, Hannah, Sarah and Henrietta, many of whose dscendants still reside within the county.

In a biographical sketch recorded by W. P. Champion, we read:

"John Sturgis was born in Philadelphia in 1787, the son of Captain Amos Sturgis who served in the American Revolution. He fought at Germantown and in several other engagements of the Revolution. In 1818, John Sturgis settled near the head of Lake Erie and in 1828 came to St. Joseph county with his family. His household goods, equally divided, were drawn by six yoke of oxen. The two loaded wagons travelled for a period of twenty-one days, a distance of 130 miles over the almost impassable prairie trails, sometimes covering only a mile in a day.

"Assisted by George Thurston, he built his log cabin, the first house ever erected in Sturgis township. In the autumn of the year 1828, General Cass, then governor, on his return from Niles with about ten persons in his company, all mounted on pack horses, encamped on the east end of the prairie near the cabin of settler Sturgis. The latter supplied the General's company with water from a spring which he drew to them with his oxen. Later, the water supply proved inadequate for Sturgis needs. He moved to Nottawa, preceding Peter and J. J. Godfroy by two years on the site where the Godfroys erected their trading post. Part of this land Mr. Sturgis sold to Adam Wakeman and he returned to the "Sturgis" prairie.

"During the territorial times, Mr. Sturgis was commissioned one of the Associate Judges of St. Joseph county and in 1836 was elected to fill a second term as a representative of the Democratic party. He was one of those who were chosen to frame the State Constitution of Michigan, but being too sick to attend, another went in his place.

"The Indians of Nottawasippi at first resented his coming, but he succeeded in assuring them of his friendship and won from them the highest expression of praise. 'They lived as neighbors in mutual trust-worthiness.' "

Sturgis township claims many of the prominent early settlers, other than those whose names have been given.

Among the first to establish homes in windowless log cabins on the Sturgis prairie were George Buck, Hiram Jacobs, John S. Newhall, Oliver Raymond, J. G. Wait, Major Isaac J. Ullman, Luther Douglas, Rev. J. E. Parker, who accompanied his father John Parker, Ephraim Bears, Jacob Pearsoll, Nathaniel Rathbun, Aaron Gilham, the Osborns, Philip Aurner, Michael Welliver, the Mumfords, DeGarmo Jones, John B. Clark, Truman Bears, Jacob Hopkins, David Petty, David Knox, all of whom came in the early thirties.

The first frame tavern was built by Oliver Raymond in 1831. Preceding this, the log house owned by Clarke was the only tavern on Sturgis prairie. It was afterwards conducted by Allman. Like all the taverns of the times, it was the meeting place of all kinds of political and civic bodies. A story is told of Major Isaac J. Ullman, a very staunch Democrat, a well known political character of the county, who was called to preside at a Democratic convention at the tavern. Someone began reading a denunciatory set of resolutions concerning some Democratic action. Hardly had the preamble been finished when the irate presiding officer rapped for order, indignantly exclaiming: "I taught wen I accepted dis chair dis was a Temocratic convendshun, but I pelief it ish notings but twiggery, and shtay I vill not"—And stay he did not. Major Ullman was a representative in the State Legislature, 1835—1836.

Oliver Raymond was the first postmaster of Sturgis and like the other postmasters of St. Joseph county, kept the mail of the entire settlement in a candle-box.

Before the coming of the mills the settlers had many home made ways of making meal. The wife of Judge Sturgis told of preparing corn meal by rubbing the ears of corn on the bottom of a perforated tin pan, the meal was then moistened with water and baked on a board before the fire in the enormous fireplace.

The "pioneer mill" consisted of a hole in a block of wood or stump of a tree. It reduced the grain to meal by means of a pestle attached to a spring-pole.

Araba Heald in 1828 put up a "pepper mill" near the east end of White Pigeon prairie. With its double cranks, two persons would grind about a bushel of grain in an hour. Samuel Pratt, we are told, went to Cutler's to board in 1829 and a part of his board bill was paid by grinding half a bushel of shelled corn in Heald's mill every other day.

In 1828, Judge Luther Newton built a saw mill on Fawn River, then called Crooked Creek, and thereafter followed a long list of mill wrights who added so greatly to the prosperity of the county.

The St. Joseph river furnished power and transportation. In 1845 Governor Barry built a warehouse on piles over the river so that flat boats, steamers and arks could unload directly within the building without extra hauling. The warehouse, after the railroad came, was moved to the river bank and became a part of the store of Barry and Eacker, still later a part of the Hotel Harvey at Constantine.

Many stories of early Sturgis concern the Fourth of July celebrations: In 1835, with Elias B. Smith as orator of the day, the patriotic crowd drank the toast—"Sturgis Prairie—May her farmers grow wealthy by industry and her pure air preserve the red cheeks of her fair daughters."

In 1839, there seems to have been a most impressive program with the Hon. J. G. Wait as presiding officer and Hon. John S. Chipman an eloquent speaker. It was whispered that the "Hon. Black Chip", as he was called, became more brilliant with each successive toast and neither wit nor drink were stinted. In 1852 Sturgis again celebrated and this time had General Isaac D. Toll as marshall of the day, and Hon. William L. Stoughton as orator. Tommy Jones, a noted fiddler, enlivened the program first with fiddle and then with drum. "Several soldiers of 1812 were present and two Revolutionary soldiers—Araunah Hibbard of Sturgis and the Rev. Edward Evans of Constantine."

Mrs. Martha Buck

Sac'war Trail at Eschol

CHAPTER VII

LOCKPORT

In this centennial year, 1930, Three Rivers is especially interested in the platting of two of the villages of 1830, Moab and St. Joseph, which are now within the city limits.

The first settlement in Moab (now third ward, Three Rivers) was made in 1829 by the Richerts. The village was platted July 28, 1830, by Christopher Shinnaman, with Neal McGaffy, justice of the peace, and J. W. Anderson, register of deeds. The village was to have included 138 acres. It was deeded to Shinnaman, May 21, 1830, by Abraham and Molly Richert, of Wayne County, Ohio. Its description, S½ of N. W. ¼ of S. 19, T. 6 S, R. 11 W, locates it in the Swartz addition.

This modern land of Moab which lies south of the intersection of Constantine street with Broadway, was marked with a boulder and bronze tablet by the Abiel Fellows Chapter, Daughters American Revolution, in 1927.

The quaint old deed transferring the property to Christopher Shinnaman by the Richerts indirectly foreshadows something of the independent spirit of the women of Three Rivers, for "the said Molly Richert" adds a corollary to the deed in which she affirms: "I signed it myself, he didn't make me."

The platting of the village of St. Joseph (now second ward) occurred July 30, 1830. It was platted by George Buck and Jacob McInterfer. The village lots were to be 60 by 140 feet; the streets were Main and Madison, Water, Washington and Market and two streets were named respectively for the wives of the platters, Catherine and Martha. The proprietors made a gift of eight lots to be used for public purposes and they prayed the government to send a court house to glorify the village of St. Joseph. (Enemies claimed it was a Dutch gift with too high a price. Be this at it may, the prayer was not granted by the government.)

Concerning George Buck, the platter, his great grandson, Willard L. Huss has written: "In the spring of 1830, George Buck, his wife Martha and family of seven children, settled on the southern bank of the St. Joseph river, on the present site of the warehouse of the Fairbanks, Morse plant on Fourth Street. They had come from Newgarden, Columbiana county, Ohio, in wagons drawn by oxen, to Mottville. Then, because interested in developing the water power available in the St. Joseph, moved to the present site of Three Rivers.

"George Buck was born in 1792 in Pennsylvania, one of six sons of Henry Buck, a soldier in the American Revolution, who had immigrated from England with his Irish wife to New York and moved later to Pennsylvania.

"George Buck was a soldier in the war of 1812, fighting in the battle of Chippewa, July 5, 1814, and the battle of Lundy's Lane, July 25, 1814. My grandfather, Lewis Buck, told a coincidence of his father's service in the war of 1812. After the battle of Lundy's Lane, George Buck rescued an American soldier who was floating in a stream. The soldier had a sabre wound across his forehead but was still alive. Years later a traveller with a deeply scarred face came to Buck's tavern and proved to be the man whom Mr. Buck had rescued.

"George Buck married Martha Irey, who was born near Harper's Ferry, Virginia, in 1798. She was a first cousin of John Brown, the famous Abolitionist.

"Martha Irey Buck was the granddaughter of Colonel Philip Irey, a colonel in the Hessian troops who fought for King George III of England in the American Revolution. Great grandmother Buck remembered as a young girl her grandfather taking his colonel's uniform from a great chest to show her. After the American Revolution Colonel Irey remained in America. They settled in West Virginia. For his services in the English army he received a grant from the English crown, but never claimed it.

"As a boy of ten years, with his older brother Lewis Buck, he helped to drive the cattle and sheep on the long trail to Michigan.

"George Buck built a two room log house on the present site of Fairbanks, Morse plant at Fourth street for his family and a log tavern, called Buck's Tavern by some—others called it The Half Way House. It was the only hostelry between White Pigeon and Prairie Ronde. The first Lockport township convention met at Buck's tavern and great grandmother Buck, with the aid of a 17 year old boy, prepared and served dinner for the 73 guests."

In his reminiscences of the old tavern days, Mr. George W. Buck wrote: "There were three camps of Indians near Three Rivers. They would gather, dance all night and in the day time go about their business. We never locked our doors, the latchstring was always out. The Indians would come in, stir up the fire, smoke and when they wished to sleep would roll up in their blankets, say: "White people to bed" and when I awoke in the morning the Indians would be nowhere in sight. They would exchange venison, maple sugar or berries for anything we raised and were especially pleased to receive warm bread."

From the paper by Willard Huss, the story of the pioneer George Buck is continued: "The Indians before entering the tavern would sneak up to the watch dogs which were tied

outside and bind their mouths tight to save themselves from being bitten. Whenever the Indians came with firearms or other weapons, George Buck would put their guns away for the safety of all concerned. One time when George Buck was away, five Indians entered the tavern and compelled Martha Buck to dance for them to a tune with the words: "Yea, Yea, Yea, Wauee." Martha and her young children were very much frightened, the latter running off to hide, but Martha showed her fortitude and courage by acting as if she were enjoying herself.

"Buck's tavern, like all of the early taverns, sold liquors as well as food and lodging. All food which had to be purchased, as well as the liquor, was brought from Detroit—the long trip there and back required several weeks.

"Buck's ferry, owned by George Buck and sons, was operated from what is now Fourth Street to the third ward side. Fifty cents for a team and large double wagon, twenty-five cents for single rigs and ten cents for foot passengers. The ferry foat was fifty feet long and twenty wide and was towed across by rope and tackle. It was anchored at what is now the end of Buck street near Sheffield shops and connected with the west bank with a road that followed the old Pottawatomie trail, coming out back of the Three Rivers House."

Mr. Buck purchased 800 acres from the government and eventually owned about 1000 acres. On that which is now second ward he, with Jacob McInterfer, platted the village of St. Joseph. "He was one of the principals in the Lockport Canal Construction company which built a dam across the St. Joseph and dug the canals to develop water power. The company failed in the panic of 1837. George Buck salvaged the saw mill he had built on the present site of the wood shop of the Fairbanks, Morse plant. He was appointed the first postmaster of "Bucks" and elected the first Justice of the Peace."

Mr. Buck was interested in the Lockport bank. During the wild financial flurry of 1837, the banks were designated as of two kinds: "wild cat" and "red dog." If the notes were printed directly for a certain destination, having the name and place of the bank in the same colored ink, while the rest of the note was engraved, then the bank was a "wild cat"; but if the notes were left blank, to be filled in, where ever they might be cashed, with a stamp inked in red, then it was denominated a "red dog". Two of the latter banks were established in St. Joseph county—one at White Pigeon, which collapsed under state inspection; and the other bank in Lockport. A

"wild cat" bank was established, also, at Centerville with Columbia Lancaster as president in 1838.

The Farmer and Mercantile bank of Centerville was a "red dog". T. W. Langley published a warning against selling their notes at a discount and this bank went the way of the rest.

Mr. Buck was noted for a canny business instinct. A story is told of Mr. Buck by B. M. King, concerning an experience in the Lockport bank." Mr. Buck was notified that the bank examiners were on their way to the village. He went to Kalamazoo to borrow gold and silver deposits to be ready for them. He went with a one horse wagon and on returning with the kegs of deposits lost his way and had to remain in the forest over night. He slept in his wagon with the gold for a pillow but reached the bank ahead of the examiners." The Three Rivers bank passed the examination and the next day Mr. Buck returned the borrowed gold to Kalamazoo.

"George and Martha Buck were both Quakers and used the old form of Thee and Thou in their speech. George was a weaver by trade and could weave beautiful birds eye and figured linen of all kinds. They grew, prepared, spun and wove their own flax. Likewise, they spun, wove and made all their own woolen clothes. The women doing the spinning and George the weaving.

"Martha Irey Buck was well educated, very capable and industrious. Her grandchildren said she knew every tree, flower and herb that grew in the fields.

George and Martha had 13 children: Philip, Rachel, Lewis, Elizabeth, Martha, Hannah, George, Mary, Susan, Robert, Thomas and Charles. All reached mature years. Many of their descendents are residents of Three Rivers. They include the Mead, Huss, Robinson, Buck, Burman and other families.

"In later years Mr. Buck built a tavern of sawed lumber. It contained the first open stairway in Three Rivers. The tavern stood on what is now the corner of Fourth and Pleasant streets. Years later, after it long had stood unoccupied, it burned by 'chance' on the occasion of a Fireman's Tournament which was held in Three Rivers to demonstrate a new steam fire engine, that the village contemplated buying. The engine availed little for the old tavern burned to the ground.

"George Buck died in 1854 at the age of 64 years and his wife, Martha, in 1873, at the age of 75".

Concerning the second member in the company of platters of the village of St. Joseph, Jacob McInterfer, his daughter, the late Mrs. Sophia Salsig, is entitled to tell the first settler's story — a story of the exodus

to Michigan, by Three Rivers' first family. It was written in 1900 by Mr. M. H. Bumphrey for the "Home-coming". Mrs. Salsig said: "Our family—mother, father and twelve children and three young men whom father brought along to help, came in 1828. Nine other families started with us but stopped along the line. We were three weeks coming from Wooster, Ohio. They had to chop and build corduroy roads through the black swamp. We were the first settlers in Three Rivers and there were no roads and no houses between here and White Pigeon. The Indian trail from Elkhart to Nottawasippi ran close by our house. Father built a block house and from it we could see Indians at almost any time as they passed along the trail. They were friendly because they had a good chief—Sagamon. He died in 1831. There were no mills, we had to go to Monroe for our supplies. I remember at one time we ran out of flour and bread, so we hollowed out a stump, pounded corn, sieved it and made corn bread. Mother baked her bread in a stick oven. When we arrived at the mouth of the Rocky, we stopped on what is now Constantine Street. Father drove under a big oak tree and said: 'Here is our house. It's a green house'. It is now the Felix Guettoff property.

"Father bought a birch canoe of the Indians and took mother across where the Portage empties into the St. Joseph. Father said: "What shall we call this place?" and mother replied: "I have heard nothing but three rivers ever since you entered the land. Call it Three Rivers." Later, with all the dignity of pioneer ceremony, the name was officially bestowed on the land between the rivers. The ceremony took place on top of the high sand bluff which eventually became block one on South Main Street.

Mr. McInterfer brought everything necessary to stock the new home, including sheep and cows. We are told that on the road the cows were milked, the milk put in the churn and strapped on the wagon. At night the milk was often found to be already churned. Mrs. Salsig remembered the old French trading post kept by Cassoway and Lewis Gibson, which stood in the immediate vicinity of LaSalle Park, Third ward.

Three Rivers, A Centenarian

The land between the Rocky, Portage and St. Joseph Rivers was granted by the United States Government to the Honorable John H. Bowman, May 26, 1832.

"Be it remembered, that on this 28th day of November, 1836, personally appeared before me, as Justice of the Peace, the subscriber, John H. Bowman, personally known to me,

proprietor of the property designated in the written plat, who acknowledges that he made the map or plat. That he hereby gives the land therein specified for public use and property of St. Joseph county, and desires to have the same recorded for the use therein specified.

Attested—I. W. Coffenberry, Reg. of Deeds.
Cyrus Judson, Justice of Peace."

That which is now first ward was not platted as Three Rivers until 1836, but there was a small settlement here earlier. The rivalry of the two settlements, St. Joseph and Three Rivers, the one south of the St. Joseph river and the other north of the river, involved the platters and settlers in many a lively skirmish. In one instance it involved them in a lawsuit for trespass. It's funny old records are still on file at Centerville, but results of the lawsuit were not humorous for they remained as a root of bitterness long after the cause was forgotten by the followers of Buck, mine host of the Half-Way House, platter of St. Joseph, and John H. Bowman, the first State representative from the county and platter of the rival town.

The Hon. John H. Bowman is locally revered as the platter of the village on the north shore of the St. Joseph river which he called Three Rivers, November 28, 1836. In his own generation, he was noted as a Whig and Methodist. He was born in 1796 at Mt. Bethel, Northampton county, Pennsylvania. In 1817 he married Sophia Freese, who died in 1823. Their children were Wm. F., Jesse, Martha (married Brown) and Sally.

In 1826 he married Ann Millard, who died in 1838. Their children were John Q., Andrew H., Sarah Ann, and Amelia (Mrs. Hill of Colon).

In 1832 Mr. Bowman received a land grant in St. Joheph county and in 1834 built the "first house of any pretensions" in Three Rivers. In 1833 he built the first grist mill and in 1836 platted Three Rivers, and purchased the Beadle mill, which was built in 1833; and in 1837 began the manufacture of flour under the firm name of Smith and Bowman. In 1838 he began building a flouring mill at Colon and the next year saw it in operation.

He was a major in the Pennsylvania State Militia. In 1837 was elected to Michigan State Legislature on the Whig ticket.

In 1844, Mr. Bowman married Mary Ann Raymond of Three Rivers and had one son, John Raymond Bowman. In 1845 Mr. Bowman sold his interest in Three Rivers and moved to Colon. He died while traveling in the south and is buried in the south.

During the years one part of the old plat, block 31, has been continuously in the minds of the people. It was used by Mr. Bowman for a cemetery and permission given for other families to use it for burial purposes.

The authentic history of the old Bowman cemetery, now the John H. Bowman Memorial Park, begins with May 26, 1832 when the United States government granted to John H. Bowman an estate, part of which, on November 28, 1836, he platted as Three Rivers. Of this plat, Block 31 was bounded by Seventh, Eighth and Main streets. Its earliest deed transfers it to David Comstock of New York City in 1836, and in 1837 Comstock redeeded to Mr. Bowman. That it was used as a cemetery as early as 1839 is proven by the descriptions of adjacent property, which refers to it as a grave yard. Old residents claim there remain at least one hundred who were buried in the cemetery, but there is a record of only the following: Mrs. Christian Bowman Winn, a daughter of a soldier of the American Revolution, for whom the D. A. R. placed a grass marker; Lewellyn and Luella Cowling, children of John Cowling; Charles Cross, son of Charles and Sarah Cross, who died about 1854 and is buried on the west side; some of the Fausts and the Grahams; Martha Jessup; Mrs. Martha Wetherbee King, born in 1807 and died in 1846; Polly Moore; T. H. Oliver, soldier of 1812; Mrs. Pauline Pulver, died about 1855; Wm. Riegel, buried near the northeast line; Peter Wilkenson, buried in northeast corner. The Riverside Cemetery Association have on record the names of those who were removed from the Bowman cemetery to Riverside in the early sixties.

The Abiel Fellows Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, placed a sun dial in the cemetery in honor of "A civic benefactor, John H. Bowman, and the pioneer dead who for years have rested in the old burying ground 'unwept, unhonored and unsung'." The sun dial was presented by the Chapter Regent, Dr. Blanche M. Haines, and accepted for the city by Mayor Cole, May 15, 1915.

A letter from Dr. J. J. Brown, grandson and one of the John H. Bowman heirs, assured the D. A. R. that as long as the property technically remained a cemetery it was the property of the City of Three Rivers; should it be vacated by act of legislature, it would revert to the Bowman heirs. In the name of the Bowman heirs, Dr. Brown endorsed the action of the city in making use of the cemetery as a memorial park and asked that in return that the city erect a suitable monument to John H. Bowman.

In her address during the ceremonies of the day of dedication, the chapter historian pleaded that a suitable marker be

erected in honor of the life of John H. Bowman, and said in part: "To be surrounded by the memorials of men who 'gladly live', 'who lay them down with a will', is to have continuously present a reminder of the unbroken life of the race, its unity, its far reaching brotherhood.

"It is a school boy's right to read the story of a nation's history—its courage in war, its activities in peace; They should be brought to his consciousness by memorials that stand for all that is fine and is truly great. It is his right to learn the sequence, the relationship of the present and the past, to have as a spur to good deeds and self respect that which comes to an individual who consciously bears a good name, who knows the part the people of his community have played in the development of the nation.

"It is every child's right to have such patriotic training that as an American citizen he will give—gladly give—respect when and where respect is due".

Three Rivers School and Library

To Three Rivers the old "minute" book of the first public school is a precious legacy. In 1882 it was in the possession of the Prutzman family. It is hoped that eventually it may be returned to the public archives. The following discription and excerpts were published by G. A. B. Cooke in the Tribune of June, 1882:

"The book consists of sixteen sheets of heavy ruled foolscap, stitched with strong twine and only seven pages utilized." The first entry reads:

Record of School district No. 1, in Buck's township, St. Joseph County, State of Michigan. Said school district No. 1 includes sections 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, and so much of 10, 17 and 18 as lies north of St. Joseph river and east of Rocky river and bounded west by Portage river.

The first meeting of the Board of Education was held July 1, 1837, of which the following proceedings are recorded:

At the organization of school district No. 1. Present: Burrows Moore, Philip Hoffman, John Smith, Stephen Moore, Abram Bokoyan, Abram Prutzman, Thomas Millard, Joseph, Millard and Joseph Sterling—Philip Hoffman chosen moderator. He took his seat and chose Joseph Sterling director and Thomas Millard assessor., Motion was made by John Smith to raise $100.00 to build a school house and it carried unanimously.

On July 15th, the board resolved: "To purchase a site for the schoolhouse on the northwest corner of John Bowman's lot adjoining the "cemetery", also that the school be 24x30 and at a height of 10 feet. Said house to be completed the

1st day of December 1837." At this meeting occurs a new name on the minutes that of C. Erway.

A "yearly meeting" was inaugurated on October 21, 1837 at which "John Bowman was elected moderator; Joseph Sterling director and Thomas Millard assessor. They were voted one dollar per day for time spent in pursuing their duties. They further voted that "if any one could be found at a resonable price to work, that the studding in the school building should be laid in mortar".

A list of the children between the ages of five and seventeen who would attend the school is given as: Pauline, Zeraiah, Leonard and Almire Osgood; William and Sterling Bristol; John W. George; Christian P. and Susan Hoffman; Roxy, Jane, Emmet and Samanthy Erway; George and Levi Bristol; Noe and Hiram Everts; Susannah, Richard, Charity and Benjamin Wetherby; Oliver, Joseph, James and Sarah Wetherby; Juliann, Jefferson, Horace, Amanda, Elizabeth and George Salsig; Daniel P, and John C. Anderson; Ambrose, Edward and Robert Moore, Philip Smith; Ginnett Parker; Amanda Detterick; Amelia and Joseph Bowman; forty six in all.

In October of 1838, it was "voted to have four months school by a qualified teacher and to raise $50 in addition to its apportionment for the school teacher's support."

New names for the second year were: Orval and Allmon Fellows; Timothy Wilson; Mariah Snow; Eliza Ann, Hiram, Chancy and Benjamin Farley; Josiah Farley; Arastice and Suffrona Strong; Sarah Glass.

It was not until 1840 that the school board voted to move the school to block four, lot one on East street. In the same year the question was reconsidered and the schoolhouse was "set" in the public square.

Another record in the minute book is most interesting in the eyes of library folk: "At a town meeting October 1, 1837, with John H. Bowman, moderator; Joseph Sterling director and H. Bristol assessor, it was voted that five dollars be raised to purchase books for a library, and that the district school board be authorized to select and purchase said books. That the said district raise a sum sufficient to purchase a suitable case. That said library be kept in the school house and that John H. Bowman be librarian.

In 1839, with Dr. E. A. Egery as moderator, Emmor Millard, director and A. C. Prutzman assessor, another $5.00 was voted for books, with A. C. Prutzman, librarian, he having the privilege of keeping the "Library" at his home. On turning to the itemized financial statement, we find "said suitable library case" listed at six dollars.

A list of books in the old minute book may be the text books recommended for study by the school board, but it is also doubtless, the list purchased for the first library and so carefully preserved in "said suitable case": Webster's dictionary, Cobb's dictionary, Walker's dictionary, Kirkham's grammar, Murry's grammar, Cobb's spelling book, Parley's geography, Onlies geography, Dabold's arithmetic, Pike's arithmetic, Bennett's arithmetic, Colburn's arithmetic, The National reader, The English reader, Young's reader.

Though there is space for the names of only a few of the earliest pioneers, at least those should be recorded of the little coterie who organized the First Presbyterian Church and gave a cultural impetus to the Three Rivers settlement: Hon. E. S. Moore, the Prutzmans, the Kelseys, the Millards, the Rev. Ogden and their associates to whom special tribute is paid in a later chapter.

1850

To genealogists, at least, the most important event of the "fifties" is the census record taken in 1850.

Heads of Families, Lockport Township,
St. Joseph Co., Michigan

Census of 1850—Vol. 9.

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
1	Chas. Boyer	36	Penn.	777
	Sarah	30	Penn.	
2	Calvin H. Starr	38	New York	
	Harriet	28	New York	
3	Harry Cady	40	New York	
	Susan	40	Conn.	
4	Ebenezer White	34	Penn.	
	Elizabeth	31	Penn.	
5	Samuel Cronmiller	36	Penn.	
6	George Stone	44	England	
	Mary Jane	37	New York	
	Pliney S. Bradbury	23	Ohio	
7	Robert Alexander	43	Ireland	
	Christiana	44	New York	
	Jennett Stuart	73	Scotland	
8	Silas D. Ricardson	33	New Hampshire	
	Lura M.	25	Vermont	
9	Lucy Dexter	59	Conn.	778

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
10	Samuel W. Platt	40	Ohio	778
	Eliza	38	Ohio	
11	Elias W. Talbott	29	Mass.	
	Amanda	19	New York	
	John H. Clewes	23	Virginia	
	Andrew Deveran	26	Ireland	
12	Lenuel S. Hart	32	New York	
	Elizabeth Hart	27	New York	
	Levi Culver	33	Conn.	
13	Henry W. Thompson	45	Penn.	
	Mahala F.	36	New York	
14	Marmaduke Southwick	50	Mass.	
15	Othmie Tripp	47	Maine	
	Anna E.	41	New Brunswisk	
	Jesse Kemp	26	New York	
	L. Jane	22	New Brunswick	
16	Ezekiiae B. Turner	25	Vermont	
	Helen E.	20	New York	
17	Charles Dodge	50	New York	779
	Nancy	51	New York	
	Cornelia Vantafflin	21	New York	
18	Alexander Stewart	37	New York	
	Maria	30	New York	
	David Knapp	20	New York	
19	Chas. P. Jacobs	54	Michigan	
	Eliza P.	44	New York	
20	Richmond E. Case	22	New York	
	Laura A.	24	New York	
	Maria Hewings	60	New Hampshire	
21	Jane Reed	36	Ohio	
22	Washington Weld	35	New Jersey	
	Maria	34	New York	
23	James M. Gilkinson	62	New York	
	Nancy	57	Kentucky	
24	Myers Vincent	45	Virginia	
	Margaret	36	New York	
25	Joseph Gray	25	New York	
	Rosinia	22	Penn.	780
26	Timothy E. Fletcher	43	Vermont	
	Emma	42	Mass.	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
27 William H. Veeder	47	New York	
Catherine	45	New York	
28 Thomas R. Shaffer	35	New York	
Mary	23	Penn.	
29 George E. Guernsey	30	England	
Angeline	28	New York	
30 J. Eastman Johnson	44	New York	
Charity	39	New Hampshire	
31 William Dermott	47	Conn.	
Sarah	46	New York	
Robert Parker	23	New York	
Eli Hale	26	Michigan	
32 Henry Garns	35	New York	
Dinah	32	(unknown)	
33 Jefferson Hill	45	(unknown)	
Emily	39	Mass.	781
34 Luther Ellis	43	New York	
Mary Anne	27	Vermont	
35 Daniel Carr	42	New York	
36 Samuel Hogan	31	New York	
Laura	30	New York	
37 Edmund C. White	38	New York	
Alvina	40	New York	
38 Harriet Gepler (Kepler?)	29	Conn.	
39 Abram Amuson	31	New York	
Mary	29	Penn.	
40 Peter Ruttedge	40	Penn.	
Jane	37	Ireland	
41 John Smith	26	Ireland	
Sally	27	New York	781
42 Albion B. Smith	19	New York	
43 John McKie	58	New York	782
Jane	56	New York	
44 William Granger	43	New York	
Frances	34	England	
45 William Duncan	52	England	
Sarah	52	England	
46 Peter Pugh	40	England	
Mary	47	England	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
47	Sarah Westcott	40	England	
48	Solomon Cummings	64	England	
	Elizabeth	67	Mass.	
49	George Hardy	40	New York	
	Francis	36	England	
50	Harrison Benson	26	Vermont	
	Rachael	26	New York	783
	David Thimmel	29	New York	
51	John F. Arney	34	New York	
52	Benjamin Noe	60	Vermont	
	Elizabeth	35	New Jersey	
53	John Arney	64	Ohio	
	Ruth	36	England	
54	Jacob Feegles	23	New Hampshire	
	Martha	23	Ohio	
55	Elias Sands	38	Ohio	
	Mercy	26	New York	
56	Samuel Buck	45	Penn.	
	Sarah J.	29	Ohio	
57	Alson Richards	50	Conn.	
	Elsy	40	Conn.	
58	George Buck	58	Penn.	783
	Martha	52	Virginia	
59	Varney Jones	28	Ohio	784
	Charlotte	18	New York	
60	Miles Jones	35	New York	
	Jannette	27	New York	
61	John C. Jackson	39	England	
	Alta	35	New York	
62	Charles B. Fitch	66	Conn.	
	Harriet	67	Conn.	
63	Samuel A. Fitch	39	Ohio	
	Catherine	35	Penn.	
64	Thomas H. Fitch	45	Conn.	
	Aurelia	33	Vermont	
65	William Donance	23	New York	785
	William Blue	22	Ohio	
	John Berry	19	Ohio	
	Richard Wetherbee	21	Ohio	
	Woodward Niles	19	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
66	Elijah Williamson	35	Penn.	
	Mahala	35	New York	
67	Jacob Williamson	40	Penn.	
	Loisa	35	New York	
68	James Crawford	26	Ohio	
69	Frederick Daniels	29	New York	
	Caroline	22	New York	
	William Pearson	22	Indiana	
	William Anton	24	New York	
70	Joy H. Chapin	40	New York	
	Mary	41	Mass.	
	Wm. W. Jones	24	New York	
	Joseph C. Johnson	19	New York	
71	James B. Little	28	New York	
	Eunice C.	19	Ohio	
72	Sanford Freeland	26	New York	
	Susan	20	New Jersey	
73	John K. Wooley	38	New Jersey	785
	Fanny M.	33	New Jersey	785
74	Robert Drake	31	Penn.	
	Elizabeth	27	New Jersey	
75	Cornelius Ennis	52	New Jersey	786
	Ann	52	New Jersey	
76	Josiah Woolf	31	Penn.	
	Mary Ann	29	New York	
77	Christopher Austin	38	New York	
	Sophrona	35	New York	
78	Daniel H. Johnson	39	Maine	
	Magdola	33	New York	
79	Dwight Stebbins	34	New York	
	Rosina	35	New York	
80	Daniel F. Wolf	28	Penn.	
	Minerva	19	New York	
81	John Wolf	56	Penn.	
	Barbara	60	Penn.	
82	George Tanney	37	New York	
	Catherine	34	New York	
	Horace Knapp	23	Vermont	
83	Lewis Miller	46	Vermont	787

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
	Mary Ann	34	Penn.	
	Cuyler Stebbins	28	New York	
	Benjamin F. Stokes	24	Penn.	
84	William Fulkerson	27	Ohio	
	Charity	27	Penn.	
85	Lewis White	49	New York	
	Elizabeth	40	Penn.	
86	David H. Anton	32	New York	
	Maria E.	21	New York	
87	James Cragues	54	Ireland	
	Fanny	40	Penn.	
88	George Spencer	44	New York	787
	Atalanta	42	New York	
89	John Baum	39	Penn.	788
	Lydia Jane	28	New York	
90	William Rider	46	New York	
	Rachael	44	New York	
91	George Spencer	28	New York	
	Keziah	23	New York	
	Sally Sands	52	Vermont	
92	Levi G. Smith	39	New York	
	Hearty	35	New York	
93	Jermiah H. Gardiner	32	New York	
	Ann	26	New York	
94	William Armitage	59	England	
	Bathseba	53	England	
95	Charles H. Thomes	45	Switzerland	
	Charlotte Adolphine	31	Switzerland	
	Frederick Thiebaud	17	Switzerland	
96	James F. Thomes	38	Switzerland	789
	Eleanor	25	New York	
97	Lewis F. Thomes	44	Switzerland	
	Sarah	43	Penn.	
	Charles F. Thomes	69	Switzerland	
	Julia	73	Switzerland	
98	William Hutchinson	45	Penn.	
99	Henry Caul	40	Penn.	
	Caroline	40	Penn.	
100	Thomas B. Millard	38	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
	Mary Loisa	29	Penn.	
101	Erastus Thompson	29	New York	
	Susan	20	New York	
102	Solomon Cummings	28	New York	790
	Nancy	25	New York	
103	Daniel Stewart	39	New York	
	Mary	37	New York	
104	Samuel Westcott	68	New York	790
	Sally	58	New York	
105	William H. McClerg	30	Penn.	
	Fanny	29	Penn.	
106	Daniel Francisco	32	New York	
	Deborah Anne	21	New York	
107	John Clubine	54	New York	
	Mary	43	Penn.	
108	Barber Gray	38	New York	
	Sarah	31	New York	
109	Joseph B. Millard	35	Penn.	791
	Jane	35	Penn.	
110	Henry Hicks	25	New York	
	Jennett	19	New York	
111	Jefferson Salsig	25	Penn.	
	Ruth Ann	21	New York	
112	William McKey	48	Penn.	
	Safina	37	Penn.	
113	Orin Hicks	33	New York	
	Sophia	35	New York	
114	Bruden Hicks	62	Rhode Island	
	Betsey	45	New York	
115	Silas Spaulding	57	Vermont	
	Eunice	49	Penn.	
116	Jacob Myers	48	Penn.	792
	Anna Maria	17	Penn.	
	Susan Millard	30	Penn.	
117	Elisha Millard	35	Penn.	
	Julia Ann	30	Penn.	
118	Myron Luce	29	New York	
	Nancy	23	New York	
119	Edward S. Moore	45	New Jersey	792

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
	Mary P.	45	Penn.	
	Marie Kepler			
120	James Clubine	31	Penn.	
	Fanny	27	Penn.	
121	Isaac Miller	41	Penn.	
	Jane	34	Penn.	
122	Sterling F. Harding	30	Penn.	793
	Abigail	22	New York	
123	Leonard V. Rich	30	New York	
	Anna	26	Mass.	
124	James E. Kelsey	34	New York	
	Maria Louisa	27	Conn.	
125	Stephen Kelsey	27	New York	
	Maria P.	25	Penn.	
126	Robert Crosette	26	New York	
	Clara A.	24	Penn.	
127	Joseph Hiles	36	Penn.	
	Elizabeth	35	Penn.	
128	Edward Egrey	40	Vermont	
	Amelia	24	New York	
	Orange Haywood	66	Vermont	
129	Lewis Quaco	36	Penn.	
	Mary A.	34	Penn.	
130	David S. Hale	32	New York	
	Mary Ann	25	Penn.	
131	Jacob Rumsey	24	New York	
	Sarah Ann	25	New York	
132	Lewis Salsig	28	Penn.	
	Sophia	25	Penn.	
133	Stephen Hile	33	Penn.	794
	Rachael	32	Penn.	
134	Reuben Fairman	56	Mass.	
	Phebe Ann	41	New York	
135	James S. Richards	27	Penn.	794
	Maria	19	Penn.	
136	Philip Lantz	40	Penn.	
	Esther	46	Penn.	
137	Thomas Twedia	31	Ireland	
	Sarah Jane	30	New York	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
138 Peter Shrom	35	Penn.	
Martha	32	Penn.	
139 Henry L. Spencer	32	New York	
Rebecca	32	New York	
140 Henry Blaumen	40	Penn.	
Elizabeth	39	Penn.	
141 Hugh Morton	26	Scotland	
Catherine	26	Scotland	
142 William Brokaw	26	Penn.	
Jane	21	Penn.	
143 John Young	40	Penn.	795
Harriet	33	New York	
John Holton	25	New York	
144 Henry Jewell	31	New York	
Eveline	28	Ohio	
145 Samuel Graham	36	Penn.	
Rebecca	36	Penn.	
146 Thomas T. Laird	50	Penn.	
Ann C.	46	New York	
Alex McNair	30	New York	
Elizabeth McNair	76	New York	
John Houts	19	New York	
147 W. D. Pettit	36	New York	
C. M.	33	New York	
148 Stephen P. Choate	42	Vermont	
Susan Ann	23	New York	
149 Samuel M. Bear	32	New York	795
Eleanora	25	New York	
150 Francis Rumsey	25	New York	796
Julia Ann	23	Penn.	
Luther Flood	21	Canada	
151 Albert H. Irway	37	New York	
Abigail Jane	32	Penn.	
152 George Troy	25	Penn.	
Matilda	22	England	
153 George W. Milton	25	New York	
Elizabeth	21	New York	
Bowman Hoffman	19	Penn.	
Sylvester Troy	21	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
154	John H. Bowman	54	Penn.	
	Amelia R.	18	Penn.	
155	George Gillispie	28	Penn.	
	Sarah	27	Penn.	
156	John B. Ogden	28	New Jersey	
	Charity G.	27	New Jersey	
157	Isaiah Reed	54	New Jersey	
	Sarah E.	52	Penn.	
	William Vemhom	25	New York	
	E. B. Hale	26	New York	
	Joseph E. Bowman	16	Penn.	
158	Charles A. Klady	25	New York	
	Mary	20	New York	
159	Armitage G. Moore	23	Penn.	797
	Amanda F.	24	Penn.	
160	Abram C. Prutzman	36	Penn.	
	Mary L.	33	Penn.	
161	Sarah Hamilton	33	Ohio	
162	John W. Fry	45	New York	
	Margaret	37	New York	
163	Philip H. Hoffman	50	Penn.	
	Catherine	49	Penn.	
164	Philip Jones	50	New York	
	Almira B.	47	New York	
165	E. Wellington	26	New York	
	Maria	24	New York	
166	George H. Irway	31	New York	798
	Mariett	17	New York	
167	Hiram Gaskins	26	Penn.	
	Lorana	26	Penn.	
	John Gaskins	70	Penn.	
168	William H. Smith	36	Penn.	
	Margaret Ann	17	New York	
169	Daniel Arney	30	Penn.	
	Beulah	23	New York	
170	Asaph Spencer	61	Conn.	
	Betsy	51	Vermont	
171	Herman H. Cole	31	New York	
	Emeline	30	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
172	Ezra Cole	50	New York	
	Elizabeth	50	New York	
173	Norman A. Cole	29	New York	
	Jane	28	New York	
174	Peter H. Culver	39	New York	
	Margaret	27	New York	
175	Samuel Conn	40	New York	
	Orsafilla	35	New York	
176	Z. B. Ruggles	31	Penn.	
	Mary	29	Penn.	
177	Warren Collins	43	New York	798
	Lucy L.	35	New York	
	Moses Clarke	35	New York	799
178	Oliver Bates	23	New York	
	Lorna	24	New York	
179	Maliel Dinger	27	Penn.	
	Fissa	30	Penn.	
180	Joseph Sterling	46	New York	
	Esther	44	Vermont	
181	Nelson Creveling	33	Penn.	
	Phebe	33	Penn.	
182	Henry Snyder	44	Penn.	
	Lydia	39	Penn.	
183	John McMurtrie	20	Penn.	
184	Roswell Wing	35	New York	
	Caroline	35	Penn.	
185	Lewis McMurtrie	27	Penn.	800
	Rebecca	26	Penn.	
186	Bathrick Stower	41	New York	
	Marcia K.	42	New York	
187	Charles McNair	42	Penn.	
	Elizabeth	45	Penn.	
188	Abner Fordham	43	Vermont	
	Abigail	39	Maryland	
189	John B. Devine	28	Penn.	
	Caroline	28	Penn.	
190	Benjamin Ogden	52	New Jersey	
	Emily	50	New Jersey	
191	Gilbert D. Taylor	51	New Jersey	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
Lydia	49	New Jersey	
Elisha Canfield	23	New York	
192 Joseph Stout	35	Penn.	
Susanna	44	Penn.	
193 Samuel Willard	65	Penn.	801
Frances	53	New Hampshire	
194 Samuel Weaver	33	Penn.	
Elizabeth	26	Penn.	
195 William H. Mather	28	Conn.	
Clarrissa	26	New York	
Betsy Mather	50	New York	
196 Alfred B. Moore	29	Penn.	
Nancy	31	Penn.	
197 Samuel Barnhart	38	New Jersey	
Sarah	35	Penn.	
198 Amos King	31	Canada	
Elizabeth	30	Canada	
199 John M. Leland	43	Penn.	
Sarah	38	Penn.	
200 John M. Dougherty	23	New York	
Lydia	23	Penn.	
201 Joseph Woolf	22	Penn.	
Laura	18	New York	
202 Jonas Fisher	45	Penn.	802
Mary	37	Penn.	
203 Leonard Fisher	42	Penn.	
Sarah	39	Penn.	
Valentine Sugar	25	Penn.	
204 Jacob T. Cline	54	New Jersey	
Elizabeth	51	New Jersey	
205 George Evart	50	Penn.	
Elizabeth	42	Penn.	
206 Samuel Fisher	40	Penn.	
207 Polly Budman	50	Penn.	802
208 Andrew Good	52	Penn.	
Elizabeth	43	Penn.	
209 George Leland	81	Penn.	803
Lydia	70	Penn.	
Hannah Gifford	41	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
210	Daniel Antis	56	Penn.	
	Mary	45	Penn.	
211	Miles Randall	35	Vermont	
	Harriet A.	24	New York	
212	Thomas Youngs	38	New York	
	Emma	58	Mass.	
213	Somner Rawson	26	New York	
	Marilla	18	New York	
214	Norman Rawson	56	New York	
	Elizabeth	56	New York	
215	Isaac Major	55	New York	
	Sarah	50	New York	
216	William Gilchrist	57	New York	804
	Mary	41	New York	
217	William Major	54	New York	
	Margaret S.	47	New York	
218	Eleanor Pugh	35	New York	

The foregoing is copied from a certified copy made by Lolita Connely for the Three Rivers Public Library in 1929. The names of children, born before 1850, belonging to these families may be obtained from the Three Rivers library, or by writing to the Census Bureau, Washington. In writing for the information state volume and page.

In every instance, the "age" given in the census of 1850 should be checked by other records before accepting it as authentic.

CHAPTER VIII

FABIUS AND OTHER TOWNSHIPS

Fabius, the township of beautiful lakes and wooded hills, was originally a part of White Pigeon township. The Legislative Council, in 1832—1833, divided White Pigeon and named one part for George Buck. Buck's township included both Fabius and Lockport. It was organized at the home of Hiram Harwood, of Johnny-cake prairie. The first three Justices of the Peace who were appointed by the Territorial Governor were: Hiram Harwood, Jacob W. Coffenberry and George Buck. Charles Rice was chosen moderator for the school board.

In 1840, the township of Bucks was subdivided—one portion became Lockport and the name of the other portion, in 1841, was changed to Fabius. The first 'town meeting' in Fabius was held at the home of Alfred Poe.

Among the first to settle in Fabius was Garret Sickles, who came in 1830, followed by the Harwoods, Harveys, by Wm. F. Arnold in 1832, by the Deacon William Churchills, Morrisons, Burretts, Hartmans, Kings, Anables.

When the Knevels family settled in Fabius, the forests were dense and the cattle often strayed far from home. The settlers knew the different tones of the bells which were worn around the necks of the cows and so were able each to trace his own cattle. One night one of the Knevels boys tramped for miles before he finally found old Bess on the shore of Long Lake. On his return, as he neared a particularly dark place, he remembered the story of the Beadle boy who, on similar errand, approached a thicket and found instead it was a bear. Beadle shot instantly into the open mouth of the snarling animal and the dead bear with the boy fell together. Young Beadle remained perfectly quiet until the little cubs, which he had seen, came timidly back to their dead mother. Young Beadle captured them and raised them as pets. But the story did not calm the nervous little Knevels as he rode the cow past the fear inspiring thicket.

Joshua Corry settled on land bordering the beautiful lake which bears his name. It was Joshua Corry who first encountered Hezekiah Thomas, the Spiritualist, and assisted the Thomas family to establish themselves on the "inherited land". For the story of Hezekiah Thomas, we are indebted to Mr. George Knevels, who came to Fabius as a boy of twelve years with his parents, the Granville Knevels. Mr. Knevels says of Hezekiah—"He was a tall, thin man, dressed in a much worn black dress suit, on his head a very high silk hat, much too large for him, which he kept in place by a deep dent in the crown of the hat. Hezekiah explained to Mr. Corry that

he had inherited the property which later became the Knevels estate. He was a spiritualist and soon had a following. His controls, however, did not suggest work as a means of support and the family became so destitute that the wife and children had to return to the east. Hezekiah's controls told him to collect pebbles which they promised would turn into gold. The old plank house where he had lived, contained many bushels of pebbles when the Knevels family purchased the land. The spirits, also, counseled Hezekiah to remove all of his clothing, arm himself with gun and dirk and sit in a boat on the lake to watch for a huge fish which they told him would be filled with diamonds. For weeks he obeyed "the voices," much to the indignation of the Protestant neighborhood. Because of their protests, he resumed the wearing of his silk hat and rusty black and in the early winter wandered off into the forest. Later, some of his followers made anxious by his continued absence searched for him and found him near a lumber camp, sitting on a log, frozen to death.

A few years ago a cumulative interest in the hermit of Fabius resulted in stories of marvelous treasure buried on the point of Corey lake and of haunted cabins on its shores. Insolent old chief Shavehead and the gallant chief Sagamon have been forgotten while good, sturdy, old settlers, through the alchemy of imagination, and lack of published records, have been turned into Indian chieftain. The farm, which Hezekiah Thomas claimed as an inheritance was really occupied by him as a "squatter." He had no title. After Thomas, it became the Knevels homestead and is now owned by Camp Eberhart and by the St. Joseph County Y. M. C. A.

F. H. Cheley, an entertaining story writer for boys, author of "Three Rivers Kids", doubtless had Hezekiah in mind as he told of Hesikia Thomson's treasure chest and its discovery by the Y boys when raising a flag staff at Camp Eberhart. "Just above the water line it lay. Its rusty appearance made it seem beyond a doubt to belong to a forgotten past.

"Three dead men on a dead man's chest. Yo-ho, and a bottle of rum!" shouted Durbin; but it is doubtful if the others heard him, they were so excited.

"Time had worked cruelly with the old chest. Rust had eaten and weakened it, yet the strong steel plates were still amply able to hold their secret.

"Was it gold?

"The box was turned downward on the sand.

"Bags! Musty, sour, rotting. And guns! And daggers and hair and books!

"Carefully the 'Chief' took hold of the largest bag to lift it from the chest. As he did so the bottom gave way, scattering the contents. Silence followed. The 'Chief' stood as if paralyzed, holding the empty remnants of the bag, for where they expected to see gold, there were hundreds upon hundreds of pebbles.

"Hesikia Thomson! Hesikia Thomson! The treasure chest of Hesikia, the crazy hermit! . . . . . .

"The line of boys passed by the treasure chest, each receiving something to carry to the lodge. . .

"The 'Chief' took the packet of papers . . . old deeds, checks and the map of the lake—in the lower corner of the map was written: 'Cedar chest with body. Key in lonesome oak'. Then there was, also, the old hermit's letter'!" Could boys anywhere ever have had a more perfect thrill?

Old Fabius township, once the hunting ground of Sagamon and his band of Indian warriors, the scene of depredations from grizzly old Shavehead's bands, has folk stories that thrill, but no less thrilling are its true stories of loyalty and patriotism. A stirring one of patriotic service is exemplified by the Hoisington family—a father and six members of his family, who at the first call for volunteers, enlisted for service: Abishia, the father, as a drummer, assisted in raising troops and served as drum-major in Company G, 11th Michigan throughout the war. His sons, Lucian J. in Company C, 6th regiment; William W. in Company E of the 11th Michigan, who died at Nashville; Captain Norman, in Company G, 13th Michigan Infantry and in company with many other Fabius men marched with Sherman to the sea; John M. served in Company C, 1st Michigan engineers. The sons-in-law, Benjamin Wells and H. C. Lambert, also served. The spirit of these Fabius men instilled in the hearts of their descendents is perhaps most brilliantly illustrated by the life and service of Colonel Perry M. Hoisington who has won military honors in an adopted western state.

Census of 1850, St. Joseph County, Michigan
Fabius Township, Vol. 9, pp. 483-494

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
1	Sylvester Adams	24	Ohio	483
	Jane	20	New York	
2	Elias Shull	28	Penn.	
	Caroline M.	26	Penn.	
3	Aaron Shull	34	Penn.	
	Mary	34	Penn.	
	Philip Houts	50	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
4	Joel Spaulding	27	New York	
	Anna	28	New York	
5	Garret Sickles	49	New York	
	Elizabeth F.	28	Ohio	
6	Solomon Hartman	40	Penn.	
	Emma	31	Ohio	
	Catherine Jolley	60	New York	
7	Sylvester Spaulding	25	New York	
	Angeline	21	Michigan	
8	Richard Fulcher	54	England	
	Esther Jennette	22	New York	
	Esther Bridgeman	64	Conn.	
	Julia Ann Merville	20	New York	
	Joseph Wetherbee	23	New York	
9	John Blodget	29	New York	
	Mary	23	New York	
10	James L. Graham	43	New York	484
	Elizabeth	45	New York	
11	Lewis Munson	44	Conn.	
	Polly	42	New York	
12	Stephen A. Rice	44	New York	
	Lucy J.	36	New York	
13	Juluis Erwin	27	New York	
	Nancy Ann	15	Michigan	
	Polly Barnum	43	New York	
	Eleazer Covey	18	New York	
14	Ami H. Palmer	32	New York	
	Eliza	24	New York	
15	Benjamin Haddiman	57	New York	
	Phebe Lodema	12	New York	
16	Alva Gleason	32	New York	
	Laura	27	New York	
17	Benjamin N. King	43	New York	485
	Eliza	36	New York	
18	Christopher Hammond	49	England	485
	Laura	46	Vermont	
19	Abram Moyer	51	New York	
	Sarah	50	New York	
	Henry Polly	22	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
20	Alfred Poe	47	Ohio	
	Elizabeth	20	Ohio	
	Stephen Allcote	20	Ohio	
21	John A. Slote	37	Penn.	
	Nancy	27	New York	
22	David Slote	27	Penn.	
	Sarah	26	Penn.	
	Angeline Covell	27	New York	
23	George Covell	27	New York	
24	Charles Poe	30	Ohio	
	Gassey (Cassie?)	23	Ohio	
	Luther Flood	22	Canada	
25	Andrew J. Wilkinson	28	New York	486
	Phebe E.	20	New York	
	David D. Wilkinson	26	New York	
26	John Hamilton	48	Ohio	
	Catherine	36	Ohio	
27	Robert Ady	35	Ohio	
	Sophia	25	Ohio	
28	Charles Casemant	42	Isle of Man	
	Ann	40	Isle of Man	
29	Alexander Millard	34	New York	
	Sarah Jane	24	New York	
30	William Brown	23	New York	
	Everetta	20	New York	
	Sally	55	New Hampshire	
	Spencer	21	New York	
	Phineas	64	New Hampshire	
31	Washington Bole	27	Ohio	
	Samuel Babcock	27	Penn.	
	Elizabeth	22	Ohio	
32	Elizabeth Wetherwase	60	New York	
33	Esther E. Young	24	New York	
	Lafayette Young	25	New York	
	James Young	53	New York	
	Mary	53	New York	
	Theodore	22	New York	
34	George Evans	27	England	
	Livonia	27	New York	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
35 Clark Seely	28	New York	487
Dolly Ann	21	Michigan	
Gresham	60	New York	
36 Stephen J. Seeley	30	New York	
Laura T.	24	New York	
William	23	New York	
37 Edwin Corwin	50	New York	
Clarissa	65	New York	
38 Jesse Seeley	25	New York	
Elizabeth	23	Ohio	
39 Piana Bole	56	Penn.	
Clarissa	18	Ohio	
40 Chapin Legg	44	New York	
Ann	37	New York	
41 Jesse Ferguson	40	New York	
Laura	34	New York	
42 Samuel Newel	50	Ohio	
Polly	27	Ohio	
Cassia	25	Ohio	
Elizabeth	23	Ohio	
Margaret	21	Ohio	
Robert	28	Ohio	488
43 James C. Bole	29	Ohio	
Mary	26	Ohio	
44 Richard Jaqua	29	New York	
Lydia	29	New York	
45 John Jaqua	59	New York	
Maria	46	New York	
46 William Morrison	49	New York	
Sarah	47	New York	
47 Lewis K. Brody	36	Ohio	
Rebecca	35	Ohio	
48 John Burrow	31	New York	
Ann M.	29	New York	
49 Adna Churchill	45	New York	
Sally A. R.	44	Penn.	
50 William Cochrane	28	New York	489
Phebe P.	18	New York	

Name	Age	Place of birth	Page
51 Randall Churchill	40	New York	
Catherine J.	39	Penn.	
William	78	Conn.	
52 Solomon Mann	26	Penn.	
Margaret	24	Penn.	
53 Joel Lutes	23	New York	489
Huldah	19	New York	
54 William H. Fullerton	27	New York	
Hannah	66	New York	
55 Abisha Hoisington	46	Vermont	
Nancy	43	New Hampshire	
56 Ira R. Fuller	22	New York	
Anna E.	29	New York	
57 Benjamin Hass	40	Penn.	
Ruth Ann	51	Penn.	
58 William Houtz	48	Penn.	490
Mary	42	Penn.	
59 Huldah Money	33	Penn.	
60 James D. Thompson	38	Penn.	
Eliza S.	38	Penn.	
61 Henry Hiles	46	Penn.	
Elizabeth	40	Penn.	
62 Josiah Farrar	46	New York	
Julia	40	New York	
63 Benjamin Smith	44	Penn.	491
Mary	32	Penn.	
64 Abram Money	33	Penn.	
Mary Ann	33	Penn.	
65 Reuben Wyneburgh	22	Penn.	
Lorana	18	Penn.	
66 William Arney	38	Vermont	
Mary Ann	28	New York	
67 William Huffman	33	Maryland	
Ruth	28	Ohio	
68 Thomas Ward	45	New Hampshire	
Olive A.	42	New York	
Archie M. Teal	35	Penn.	
69 Alonzo R. Hunt	39	Vermont	
Emma	40	Conn.	
Sydney	22	New York	

Name	Page	Place of Birth	Page
70 Ruth Beadle	36	New York	492
71 David Beadle	24	Ohio	
Lucy A.	20	Michigan	
72 Ira J. Beadle	26	Ohio	
Helen M.	19	New York	
73 William Coffinger	37	New York	492
Sarah M.	31	New York	
Philip D. Coffinger	25	New York	
74 Thomas Manly	42	New York	
Susan	27	Ohio	
75 Hezekiah Wetherbee	47	New York	
Abigail	48	New York	
76 Henry B. Baker	36	Conn.	
Lucy	27	New York	
Mahitabel Manly	68	New York	
77 Benjamin (Baker?)	50	New York	493
Andrew (Baker?)	48	New York	
Polly (Baker?)	44	New York	
78 Oliver P. Wetherbee	27	New York	
Ann E.	24	New York	
79 John Coffinger	28	New York	
Elizabeth	25	New York	
80 Lansing Fonda	50	New York	
Eleanor Ann	46	New York	
81 John Watkins	36	New York	
Maria	34	New York	
82 A. H. S. Teall	32	New York	
Mary	33	Scotland	
Clarissa Teal	73	Vermont	
Virsula	39	Canada	
83 David Stevenson	31	England	
Ann	29	England	
84 Joseph Graham	62	New York	
Diana	55	New York	
William	27	New York	
Olive	23	New York	
85 Nathan Harwood	36	Vermont	494
Nancy	53	Vermont	
Susan	22	New York	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
86 Daniel Eddy	26	New York	
Angeline	25	New York	
Hasel Peake	20	New York	
Van Renseleare (Eddy?)	24	New York	
87 Barnabas Eddy	42	New York	
Laura	42	New York	
88 Robert C. Smith	41	New York	
Ann	40	New York	
89 Jasper Eddy	45	New York	
Mary	33	Ohio	
William Eddy	23	Michigan	
91 Valentine P. Redway	27	Mass.	494
Mary E.	19	Vermont	
Flora C.	23	New York	
William L. Geer	20	Michigan	
92 James Adams	27	New York	
Ann	25	New York	

Mottville

"Puddleford"—Have you ever read "Puddleford Papers," which ran in the old Knickerbocker Magazine? "Puddleford was located in the west. Men, women and children live and die in Puddleford. It helps make governors, congressmen and presidents and yet who knows or cares about Puddleford? Some of the houses of Puddleford are built of logs, some of boards and some were never exactly built at all but evolved through a combination of circumstances which the oldest inhabitants have never been able to explain. The log houses were just log houses, but no one has been found with impudence enough to suggest an improvement—a pile of logs laid with mud and packed in mud, a mammoth fireplace with a chimney throat as large; a lower story and a garret and in one corner a Jacob's ladder. It is said Squire Longbow had a frame house and two rooms and this, in connection with the office of Justice of the Peace, gave him a standing and influence in Puddleford well nigh omnipotent."

Puddleford was supposed to be Mottville, the old Grand Traverse across the St. Joseph river. Of its many quaint characters, the "Hunter," John Bear, was among the most picturesque. Riley pictures him as "tall, brawny, a giant in strength," "He wore a red flannel wamus, a leathern belt girt around his waist, deerskin leggins and moccasins and a felt hat that ran to a peak. His rifle and shot-pouch were

slung around him. His face beamed with intelligence and good nature and as he greeted me, a stranger, he shook my hand as heartily as if he had known me a thousand years—with, "So you are the person that comes in here to settle, I s'pose to cut down trees and plough up this 'ere ground." I said I was. "Well, said he, "so it goes. I have moved and moved and I can't keep out of the way of the ploughs and axes. It was just as much as the deer and the beaver and otter and I could do to stand the surveyors that went trampling just as though they was to be sold out wher-or-no. Then the school district and the school with a little bell on it. Scart the game. Game can't stand school bells and church bells, stranger, they can't. They clears right out." When I advised him to give up hunting and till the soil, he indignantly exclaimed: "What on airth does the soil want tilling for? Warnt it made right in the fust place? Huh?"

During this period, the spirit of enterprise animated even the Indians. A story is told of the establishment of a toll gate conducted by the interesting old Indian, Chief Shavehead, who established a toll station on the trail near Mottville and obtained tribute from all travelers. They paid rather than have trouble. One day Ashael Savery was stopped by Shavehead. The Indian coming to the wagon, dropped his chin on the edge of the box, leaned his rifle against the body and peered wickedly up at Savery. Savery, instead of handing out the toll, grasped the Indian by the scalp lock with his left hand and with his right vigorously used his black whip over the bare shoulders of the struggling Indian. Then discharging the Indian's rifle, he drove on. The toll station was discontinued.

Undoubtedly the first grist mill in the region was built by Klinger near Mottville on the St. Joseph. Wm. Taylor kept the famous old tavern at Mottville. Wm. Taylor was with Colonel Mullet in his surveying expedition in this territory and was in the celebrated Indian fight at Battle Creek in 1824, and also has the distinction of having been the first sheriff of St. Joseph county.

In "Scenes of the Backwoods" by A. M. Beardsley, may be found a description of the Mottville of 1835. The Beardsley's came from New York by way of Sandusky, Ohio. After traveling forty days through the wilderness, they arrived at Mottville in October of that year. Among the stories told by Mr. Beardsley, one concerns a man named Quimby, who had a hermitage on an island in the St. Joseph river just below the settlement of Mottville. Quimby was muscular, swarthy, something of a pugilist. A lawyer by the name of Columbia Lancaster located at Centerville, was taken sick with ague. He was a troublesome patient and no one could manage him.

Quimby was called to act as nurse. Taking a meat ax with him, he threw it with a noisy thump on the table in the sick room and with a villianous look faced his patient. The startled Lancaster asked: "Q-Q-Quimby, what are you going to do with that ax?" Quimby, looking more savage than ever, grimly replied: "There's to be a dead pettifogger unless you straighten up". A subdued Lancaster took his medicine and went to sleep and was pronounced well in record breaking time.

The Beardsley's settled three miles north of Mottville—ten of them and a hired man, in a log castle which was twenty feet square and one and a half stories high. Mr. Beardsley describes the hardships of the settlers during the epidemic of 1838, when they fired alarm guns for help but no assistance came because there was no one in the settlement able to go. In the night a child died and three boys offered their services to the stricken household. "We three were the undertaker, preacher, sexton and funeral procession altogether. We buried their dead though we three looked more like escapes from a graveyard than a funeral procession."

"There were no highways in this part of St. Joseph county until the Bonebrights, Beardsleys, H. E. Root, Milo Powell, the Traverses, Nathan Skinner, John and Hugh Ferguson, Harry Garrison and Amidons, cut out and made them from Wood Lake to Mottville and from Porter to Constantine". "Through marshes, swamps and quagmires, we carried the timbers for bridges and causeways".

In 1840 Mr. Beardsley built a saw mill on his premises and quotes best whitewood lumber at "six dollars per thousand in trade and dicker."

Pioneers tell us that in clearing the land for agriculture, among their worst obstacles were the great whitewood trees, which were often 70 or 80 feet to the first limbs and the trunks from 2 to 8 feet in diameter. They resembled columns of a temple. "To fell them, other trees were felled across them and a fire kept burning, sometimes for weeks, until the great trees fell." Often the whitewood and oak were used for rails to build the high worm-fences, simply to get rid of the timber.

L. D. Watkins, in his "Destruction of the Forests of Southern Michigan," describes the process of clearing the land by windrowing. "The huge forest trees were chopped partly off in such a manner that they would fall obliquely towards the center of a selected space, with the tops fallen from either side inward crossing each other and lodging there to form a level mass of wood and foliage, sometimes a quarter of a mile in length. Then at the end of the line, a huge tree was

felled and as it came thundering down on the row of partly fallen trees, they would go down, one after another, with a crash each one carrying down the one in front of it. It was like a battle of giants, a sight of grandeur, with a paralyzing roar of sound. The trees were left as they had fallen until they were very dry and then when the wind was just right they were set on fire and the beautiful old forest trees became nothing but huge blackened logs with burial mounds of upturned roots. Then came the settlers to the "logging bees" when near neighbors joined in the work and with their oxen rolled the blackened logs into "log heaps". We are told that "When night came down and the men ceased their labor, they were as the blackest of the sons of Ham". Around the burned stumps the settlers planted their first crops, and so took the first steps towards Michigan's progress as a great agricultural state.

During the thirties, "A farmers outfit consisted of an ax, iron wedge, plow, harrow (this often a tree top) and a sickle. Most of the small grain was harvested by the sickle as late as 1835. Wheat and oats were stacked in a circle, in the center of which was a threshing floor of dirt, raised towards the center, upon which the sheaves were placed and trodden out by horses, the winnowing at first was done by two men waving a sheet while a third man threw the grain up in the air. Threshing machines began to make their appearance in the St. Joseph valley about 1842."

The first farmer in the St. Joseph river valley was Squire Thompson. A. B. Copley, in his "Early Settlement of Southwestern Michigan" describes the Squire as a model backwoods man, pioneer, hunter, farmer, trapper, statesman, merchant, lawyer, counsellor, arbitrator, politician, interpreter, guide, all combined in one person. He was born in 1784 and, at the age of 39, settled in St. Joseph river valley. He made frequent trips to Detroit packing out skins and furs and returning with the three indispensibles of frontier life, powder, lead and salt. "Money was no object to him and he wasted no time in trying to acquire it. He wore pantaloons faced with buckskin, a red flannel shirt, open at the throat in all weathers, no hat and only in the coldest weather wearing a coat. He emigrated to California with the 49'ers and died in 1850".

Flowerfield

The first white settler who took up a permanent residence in the township of Flowerfield, was Michael Beadle, who settled near the site of the village of Flowerfield, in 1829. He came from the State of Ohio, accompanied by his family. The first farm opened in Flowerfield was by Mr. Beadle in 1830. The first orchard was set out by Daniel Wheeler in the spring

of 1835. The first frame house was built by Mr. Beadle in 1831. The first physician to take up his residence in the township was Dr. C. L. Clewes, who commenced the practice of medicine in 1832. The first record of a regularly surveyed road in the township is dated April 17, 1834. The surveyor was a Mr. Briggs. Prior to this, the old settlers used to drive everywhere through clearings and over farms, making their way along the streams, following the Indian trails, which invariably led to the easiest fording places. From constant and long use the trails became packed like a much worn path and were on an average of fifteen inches in depth. The first grist mill was erected in 1831 by Mr. Beadle. It had one run of stone which was made out of a natural boulder almost two and a half feet in diameter. The famous Buckhorn tavern on the road between Prairie Ronde and Three Rivers was the center of its community life.

David Beadle's death occured in 1839. He is entitled to special tribute as a pioneer who was among the first to develop St. Joseph's fine water power. He utilized it in grist, saw mills and flour mills, which he built in the early thirties. The following article is condensed from a sketch printed in the Three Rivers Tribune of July 21, 1882:

"David Beadle came to St. Joseph in 1827 accompanied by Michael and his family, David Jr., Henry Whited, Morris Dickson, Joseph Quimby and Gideon Ball. After "settling" they were twice compelled to move because the surveyors found them on lands of prior claims. In 1828 they moved to Flowerfield, where David Beadle built his first mill, a 'corn cracker'" "The wheat was bolted through book muslin and worked by hand. He often had to shake the bolt for hours and in his absence his sons were given the job. In 1832, Mr. Beadle sold the mill to Challenge Wheeler and built a mill in 1833 on the Rocky at Three Rivers. In 1836 he changed it to a saw mill and in the same year built a grist mill on the opposite bank. This he sold to John H. Bowman.

In 1837 David Beadle built another grist mill at Lake Run, about one mile from Three Rivers and this he sold to Frederick Schurtz. James Valentine, a millwright and a brother-in-law of Mr. Beadle's assisted him with all except the first mill.

In 1838 he purchased a farm and the following year died, leaving a wife and eight children.

In reminiscences of pioneer times, Michael Beadle, the oldest son, tells of grinding buckwheat in a coffee grinder for a family of fifteen, of covering the pens of stock so that the wolves could not get them. He writes: "We saw the wolves often walking on top of the pens, could hear them growl and

snarl. The hardships did not keep us from having good times. We did not think it a hardship to go ten miles with an ox-team to a party for we took our good time with us." During the Black Hawk scare, Michael Beadle and Mrs. David Gilbert, of Flowerfield, melted and ran a half bushel of lead into balls for ammunition.

"The water power of St. Joseph and its tributaries was a great inducement to the settlement of the county. The first grist mill in the country was built by Judge William Meek, on Crooked Creek. The water power and mill site was located June 15, 1829 and the small mill built by Hugh Wood, the millwright, in 1830. "The bolt was turned by the hands of the owners of the grist—male or female."

"In 1831, Weston W. Bliss built a carding mill. In 1832 Judge Fitch built a saw mill at Eschol, which did an extensive business until 1840. Other early millers include the names of Robert and James Cowen, Schellhouse, Clark and Williams."

A story is told by Mrs. Henry Moore about Flowerfield's early settlers, who desired to hold Christian service on the Sabbath. They decided to meet at the store. After the little audience had gathered, some one remembered that it was unlawful to have liquor within a certain number of feet of a place where divine worship was being held. They solved the difficulty by rolling the barrel of rum, owned at the store, to the required distance from the building and then calmly proceeded with the service.

A quaintly interesting autobiography on file in the Three Rivers Public Library collection was written by the late Mrs. Arney and read before the Three Rivers Womans' Club in 1905. Mrs. Arney wrote in part:

"In September of 1836, the Ash family moved in a covered wagon from Washtenaw County to St. Joseph. We found our way through the forest by the blazes on the trees and built our house five miles west of Flowerfield.

"The first winter was a dreary one, filled with many hardships. We bought our flour from Challenge Wheeler and our venison from the Indians who took in exchange salt pork, which they called cucush, and potatoes, which to them were quoshgun.

"My husband, George Ash, purchased a small place in 1837 and as we were fifteen miles from anywhere, we had to make everything, even our own salaratus, which was ashes of burned corncobs moistened and made into little cakes."

Mrs. Arney tells of going one day to the Prutzman store on Prairie Ronde and stopping to visit a friend as she returned. It was sunset before she reached the heavy timber. As the sun

set she heard the timber wolves on her trail and vividly pictures the race on old "Bet" for home.

In 1837 Charles Woodruff organized a school district and hired Mrs. Arney as teacher. She describes the ague, the dreaded sickness of the newly-broken prairies, and of the looting by the Indians of their vegetables which grew among the stumps. She describes the Indians climbing on the roof of their cabin, then sliding down through the chimney hole left for the escape of smoke and of the Indians stealing all of their bacon and flour.

After the death of Mr. Ash, Mrs. Ash married Rev. William Arney of Three Rivers.

The people of Flowerfield and Park were next door neighbors to those of Prairie Ronde, often their farms extended into Schoolcraft township and the two townships have many folk stories in common. One of them is of a young boy by the name of Covey, who possessed a great love for tamarack gum, and was often in the forest in search of it. "One day he found a fallen tamarack tree, having upon it the coveted gum. Dropping on his hands and knees, he nipped off the gum with his teeth as he slowly worked his way towards the top of the tree. He was dressed after the fashion of the times, with shirt and pants and coon skin cap—the tail of the coon formed the apex of the cone shaped cap, which bobbed with the motion of the boy's head as he crept, his entire attention centered on the gum. As he reached the main branches a sudden vicious snarl accompanied by the rush of a sharp clawed animal over his head and back and down the tree trunk, struck terror to his heart and losing his balance, he rolled more dead than alive down to the mossy ground below. Springing to his feet he fled with utmost speed for home. The animal was a wildcat, astonished at the strange creature crawling slowly towards her—had remained quiet until alarmed for her own safety, she broke into terrifying snarls and clawed the boy with the vicious energy of her flight."

As indicated by their names, the townships of Flowerfield and Park were named, by the surveyors, because of their great beauty. Flowerfield was beyond description. Miss Ruth Hoppin wrote of it: "Much as I love forest scenes, I have not words sufficient to adequately picture them". "Wild flowers in full possession. Roads wound at will among the trees, all graceful curves and pleasing turns. In early summer the grass overtopped with wild flowers, surpassing in beautiful effects the most skillful landscape gardening. Blue lupines, variegated phlox, scarlet painted cups, purple and white erigerons, purple cranes' bills, blue spiderworts, yellow cynthias, rock roses, golden Alexanders, white meadow rue, galunis,

coarse columbine, medical lady slippers, seneca snake root, in wildest profusion and stretching as far as the eye could see under the great oak foliage. Why try to describe the earlier growths of violets, buttercups and anemones, or the later gay crowd of sun flowers, asters and all their sisters and their cousins and their aunts? The now nearly exterminated fringed gentian that flourished in abundance."

"The farmers in their eagerness to subdue the soil, have destroyed whole families of these harmless plants and have let much more hurtful ones remain.

"Must the native flowers of St. Joseph county follow the buffalo, the deer, the wild pigeon and the prairie hen into the things of the past?

"Must the day come when there shall be no patch of forest where a child may see the flowers which charmed the parents eyes?"

Park

The township of Park was named for its park like appearance. The surface was covered with great oak trees which free from underbrush and small trees gave the appearance of some great estate of old England. Nature herself being the landscape artist and the Indians by their annual fires, were the keepers who freed the forest from obstruction.

The first land entries were made by Henry Carver and Russel Peck in 1830 and 1831. Other early settlers were Jonas and Leonard Fisher, in 1834, who settled on the east bank of that beautiful sheet of water known as Fisher's lake, and for whom it was named. The lake was located partly on the Pottawatomie reservation. Other early settlers in Park were Issac Mowery and Leland Howers, the Hutchinsons, John Lomison, the Ludwigs, the Stoufers, the Hoppins, the McOmbers, Troys, the Sillimans and the Ulrich families.

The first orchard set out in the township was by Isaac Mowery in 1836. The early settlers depended largely on game for food. Mr. Ulrich shot 105 deers and three bears the first year. The first saw mill was built by Harvey Kinney in the fall of 1838.

The first preacher in Park township was a circuit rider of the Methodist Church, by the name of Kellogg, who held services in 1837. The first school taught in the township was held in a shoemaker's shop belonging to John Troy in 1837 and was taught by a Miss Kimble.

Moorepark, a station on the New York Central, established in 1871 was named in honor of the late Edward S. Moore, whose beautiful home stands but a few rods from the village. For several years it has been the property of Joseph

Wilbur and was the home of his mother the late Mrs. Lucy Millard Beaumont, daughter of the Hon. Joseph Millard.

In their "Abstracts of St. Joseph County's First One Hundred Wills", the Daughters of the American Revolution include the will which was made by Samuel Fisher. It is perhaps, the first recorded public benefaction in the county. It is of interest also, as all wills are, for the genealogical information concerning the family as the special bequests are enumerated. We read:

"$450.00 to be given for the building of a Presbyterian church at Park, within two miles of Parkville.

"Children of Jonas and Mary Fisher, i. e., Charles, Sarah Williams, Mary, Harriet, Julia, Clara, Olivia, William, each to receive stated amounts; a double amount to Samuel, his namesake. Larger amounts to Jonas and Mary Fisher; to Catherine Culbertson; daughter of James and Chesty Culbertson; and to Charity Culbertson, a daughter of James of Nottawa.

"$100.00 towards improving and fencing Park burying ground near M. E. Church, NWQ of SE¼ S35, T5, R11W.

"$100.00 to M. E. Church of Park township to paint church; and the balance to be used for the most charitable purposes that may come to their knowledge.

"Substantial gravestones to be purchased for Samuel, son of Paul Fisher of Union Co. Pa., and Samuel, son of George Fisher of Lycoming County, Pa.

The executors were his "esteemed friends" Jonas Fisher and John Lomison; and the witnesses Samuel Fisher, Jonas Everet, Andrew Reed and William Fisher.

Like all the old time makers of wills, he further disposes of the household effects including the best bed. The will closes with the request that Rev. Mr. Page of Three Rivers preach the funeral sermon and be paid ten dollars.

One of the greatest contributions made by St. Joseph county to the development of Michigan was the life and influence of the educator, Ruth Hoppin, whose childhood was lived in Park township and who lies buried in the Park cemetery.

Miss Hoppin wrote of pioneer Park:

The grape vines hanging in long festoons from the trees along the streams, a solid mass of green, furnished the wild grapes of piquant taste for jams and jellies. Trees, shrubs, vine, swamps and rivers made a perfect condition for birds and the game birds seemed exhaustless.

"My mother spun, wove, colored and made up the wearing apparel for her whole family until the incoming railroad changed everything and made home manufacture un-

profitable. Suddenly the female world found itself genteel in calico at twelve and a half cents, and delaine at twenty-five cents per yard; then the whirring spinning wheel and hand loom were put aside.

"Before the era of rag carpets was the notable one of the scrub brooms; those well remembered home made splint brooms. The rule for cleaning was to dash on and sweep off water till the floor was clean enough to "eat off" and rinsed until the water was clear as drinking water.

"People who had linen for their tables made it themselves and the greatest elegance was the ownership of the windsor chair, popularly known as the winzy.

Ye Cook Book, Cake Chart, Etc.

From a manuscript receipt book the following page reveals greater economy in words than in amounts to be used:

Pound: 1 lb. flour, 1 lb. butter, 1 lb. sugar, 8 eggs, etc. Rosewater: 3 spns mace. Whig: 2 lb. flour, 8 oz. butter, 8 oz. sugar, 1 pt. milk, raise with yeast. Cymbals: 2 lb. flour, 8 oz. butter, 1-2 lb. sugar, 6 eggs, Rosewater and spice. Cookies: 3 lb. flour, 3-4 lb. butter, 3-4 lb. sugar. Wet up and raise with salaratus.

Preceding the cake receipts were directions for making the yeast and salaratus. Evidently the pioneers took their fruit cake and plum puddings more seriously for these are given in detail—just how to "bruize on ye boarde" so many processes to be done at exactly stated moments that any housewife of dignity and standing, must have had the whole family's help in so great an undertaking.

Then there is the pork cake without butter, milk or eggs, and immediately following thereafter is given a formula for "Dyspeptic's Biscuits". Greater space is given "Ye Drinks":

Hyperion tea of most delicate flavor from ye raspberry leaves; metheglin from honey, yeast and water; ye fresh milk in which ye yeast is left to ripen in ye cool; Hostetter's bitters, sarsaparillas and a "Temperance Tasty" made of one lemon, tartaric acid, ginger, sugar and water, "Yeast 1 gill". The only directions concerning the making of it are most laconic: "Tye ye Korks."

A receipt for the superlative "schiedam schnapps" followed by the last ones on the page—evidently most often used was for sacramental wine from grapes, and "ginger ale with ye mint leaf floating in't."

Later the family receipts were collected and published and no home was complete without "Dr. Chase's Receipt Book" which contained literally "information for about everything for everybody."

Rolling and Knitting Their Own

Fashions change, but the feminine heart remains the same in its love of becoming hats. Ingenious maidens rolled and braided their own in pioneer days. After the stalks of spear-grass and red top or sweet grass had been gathered and "plaited", braided, rolled or sewed into shape, they were bleached. The bleaching process had perils of its own. Holes were bored in the head of a barrel, strings tied to the new bonnet and passed through holes in the barrel and the holes carefully plugged. It left the bonnet hanging inside the barrel and this was set over a foot stove filled with hot coals on which sulphur had been placed. Quilts closely wound around it retained the fumes. Beautifully white was the bonnet when taken out; quite as bewitching as leghorn or Italian braid when tied with pretty ribbons under a dimpled chin.

Girls of four years of age could knit their own stockings; boys of the same age, if bright, knitted their own suspenders. Superior intelligence was shown in early mastery of the "herringbone" stitch or the "fox and geese". And then there was "pegging" for the double hooked mittens, and more difficult the intricate bead bags and purses, with their landscapes, their memorials of weeping willows done in black, white and purple beads. Beautiful white bead bags or in colors to match the wedding gowns were made and watch chains in geometrical designs. In days so filled with labor where did they find time for decorative handiwork? For the sampler with its strange beasts, its flowers and vines; for the netted fringes; embroideries; farmers wreathes; quilts and coverlets and the innumerable kinds of other fancy work that have come to us as heirlooms?

The records of St. Joseph county as pictured by the early newspapers reveal many quaint old customs of the holiday season. Customs adapted from an older day which necessity had simplified to suit the plain living of pioneer times.

Christmas

The first Christmas party to be recorded in St. Joseph county was that held at the little "community" cabin on Nottawa prairie which with the addition of each family's wagon, was home "for the first ten pioneer families on the prairie." "It was a Christmas celebration with a bountiful Christmas dinner of wild turkey and game; with merry making and singing and the enticing notes of the old time fiddle tune."

As St. Joseph county prospered and evolved better living conditions, its people renewed their interest in the quaint, age-old customs which have become so great a part of Christ-

mastide and the merry making extended from the early candle light of Christmas eve to the early dawn of St. Distaff's day".

In the newspapers of every year the story is retold of the Christmas day and its merry feasts, explanations of customs and the meaning of the overtone of spiritual significance. The old records change only the names of the individuals, for every holiday issue of the old newspapers during the years spell "home coming and happiness"—college boys and girls coming home, men and women of older years "coming home."

Closely following the interest in Christmas was the watch night service. An old pagan rite transformed into the Christian service of praying the old year out and the new year in; or for those less religiously inclined, a watch night party which lasted into New Year's day with elaborate "at homes" for the New Year's callers,—"the elegant" gentlemen who sipped a bit of wine and whose good wishes grew more and more eloquent as they proceeded on their round of calls. The gay sleighing parties, the masquerades, the numerous parades have marked the happy New Years, though none became an established custom in the county.

As a climax to the holiday gaiety, our English ancestors entered with zest into the Twelfth Night revels, which have been occasionally observed during the years. "When twice six nights from Christmasse each maister in his house doth burne ye frankensense, and with his goode wife doth bringe ye blessing of ye wisemen on ye house." It was the time when with elaborate ceremony the Christmas greens were burned and in their place "ye living sprige of box above ye fire place is made to stande". It was the time when in quaint processional "with song and hymn and rondelay there was wrought the wise man's blessing on the house—when ivy, boxwood and wassail played their several parts to make, "A house wherein neither bread nor meat shall want, Nor dreadful charm have power to hurt or harm." "A time when the Twelfth Night king and all his court sing carols around the wassail bowl and pledge each others health."

Heads of Families, Park Township, St. Joseph Co., Michigan
Census of 1850—Vol. 9

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
1	Jonathan Hoats	45	Penn.	757
	Marry Ann	40	Penn.	
2	William Woodruff	47	Conn.	
	Jerusha	46	New York	
3	John Sickler	44	Penn.	
	Ann	44	Penn.	
4	Hannah Slote	61	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
5	George Slote	33	Penn.	
	Margaret	34	Ireland	
6	Jacob H. Foust	32	Penn.	758
7	Jacob Hinebaugh	32	Penn.	
	Mary Ann	21	Penn.	
8	Joseph Masser	40	Penn.	
	Catherine	35	New York	
9	Thomas Foust	34	England	
	Emily F.	32	New York	
10	Isaac Blue	41	Penn.	
	Catherine	37	Penn.	
11	Loren G. Brown	39	Penn.	
	Hester	38	Penn.	
12	John Carpener	51	New York	
	Hannah	38	New York	
13	Jonathan Booker	30	Penn.	
	Catherine	40	Penn.	
	Christopher Money	71	Penn.	
14	John Foust	63	Penn.	759
	Mary	64	Penn.	
15	Solomon Coleman	38	Penn.	
	Barbara	36	Penn.	
16	Edward Good	70	Penn.	
	Martha	61	Penn.	
17	Amos Reed	52	New Jersey	
18	Jacob Carter	40	Conn.	
	Mary	31	Conn.	
19	Samuel Moore	62	New Jersey	
	Polly	55	Conn.	
20	George Hill	33	Penn.	
	Martha	33	Penn.	
	Thomas Morrow	60	Penn.	
21	Samuel Ludwig	49	Penn.	760
	Eliza	49	Penn.	
22	William Caven	50	Penn.	
	Jane	52	Penn.	
23	George Gentsler	28	Penn.	
	Catherine	27	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
24	Mary Fox	39	Penn.	
	John Hoats	45	Penn.	
	John Fox	45	Penn.	
25	Hiram Schoonmaker	39	New York	
	Sarah Ann	26	New York	
26	Abram J. Schoonmaker	41	New York	
	Amelia Ann	41	New York	
	Thomas Silliman	28	Penn.	
	Benjamin Curtis	23	New York	
	Justin Wait	25	New York	
27	Samuel P. Ludwig	26	Penn.	761
	Mary	21	Penn.	
28	Frederick Dentler	35	Penn.	
29	Solomon Guiber	29	Penn.	
	Mary	28	Penn.	
30	James Johnson	26	Penn.	
	Mary	19	Penn.	
31	William Clinton	45	Penn.	
	Mary	36	Penn.	
32	John Holiday	38	Scotland	761
	Margaret	29	Penn.	
33	Garrett Grovenburg	42	New York	
	Esther	26	Ohio	
	Alexander McMeine	31	New York	
34	Charles McCumber	49	New York	762
	Mary	45	Vermont	
35	William Stoufer	30	Penn.	
	Jane	32	Penn.	
36	Chauncey Woodward	46	New York	
	Irene	48	Penn.	
37	William Roberts	57	New York	
	William H.	32	New York	
38	Walter L. Foster	34	Penn.	
	Mary E.	22	Ohio	
39	Andrew M. Leland	32	Penn.	
	Sarah K.	35	Penn.	
40	Andrew Hinebaugh	48	Penn.	763
	Catherine	45	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
41	Jacob Bailinger	25	Penn.	
	Mary Ann	20	Penn.	
42	Richard Daugherty	27	New York	
	Susan	26	Penn.	
43	Henry Hinebaugh	40	Penn.	
	Lydia	35	Penn.	
44	John Troy	48	New Jersey	
	Rebecca	47	New Jersey	
45	John W. Moore	37	Penn.	
	Charlotte	32	Penn.	
46	John Brown	35	New York	
	Harriet Miller	30	New York	
47	Finley Campbell	31	Penn.	
	Ann	28	Penn.	
48	Ambrose Campbell	25	Penn.	764
	Jane	50	Penn.	
49	Isaac Mowery	41	Penn.	
	Catherine	39	Penn.	
50	Philip Filker (Felker?)	37	Germany	
	Sarah	35	Penn.	
51	Jacob Bauman	38	Penn.	
	Susan	39	Penn.	
52	John Falger	40	Germany	
	Magdeline	30	Germany	
53	Isaac Ulrich	50	Penn.	
	Elizabeth	46	Penn.	
54	Andrew Reed	46	New Jersey	765
	Catherine	44	Penn.	
55	Jacob Shranger	43	Penn.	
	Catherine	39	Penn.	
56	John Hartranaff	45	Penn.	
	Esther	39	Penn.	
57	Lydia Carpenter	41	New York	
58	Charles G. Carpenter	38	New York	
	Mary Ann	36	New York	
	John Carpenter	87	New York	
	Mary Bostwick	61	New York	
59	Samuel A. Stirling	41	New York	
	Lucinda	37	Conn.	

Name	Age	New York	
60 John Bramer	43	Penn.	766
Margaret	43	Penn.	
61 Isaac Budman	46	Penn.	
Susanna	43	New Jersey	
James Budman	49	Penn.	
62 Persifer Golvard	37	Penn.	
Anne O.	30	Ohio	
63 James Hutchinson	50	Penn.	
Rosanna I.	20	Penn.	
Samuel Shranger	28	Penn.	
64 Anna Reed	31	Penn.	766
Elizabeth Goward	64	Penn.	
65 William Ousterhout	44	Penn.	
Catherine	38	Penn.	
66 John F. Williams	26	New York	767
Cyrus W. Card	36	New York	
67 James Reed	43	Penn.	
Barbara	35	Penn.	
David Millison	71	Penn.	
68 Rebecca Hippen (Hoppen)	59	New Jersey	
69 Jefferson Tompkins	33	New York	
Phebe E.	30	New York	
70 John Adams	27	New York	
Cornelia	17	New York	
Maria Adams	56	New Jersey	
71 Frank Dentler	31	Penn.	
Mary	29	Penn.	
72 Horace Boacht	26	New York	
Caroline E.	23	New York	
73 Robert M. Roath	38	New York	
Hannah A.	28	New York	
74 Sarah Card	57	New York	768
75 Walter B. Love	38	Penn.	
Benjamin Hutton	58	Penn.	
Abula	55	Penn.	
76 Philip Caspar	25	Penn.	
Hetty	29	Penn.	
77 John Wyneburg	57	Penn.	
78 Daniel Wyneburg	26	Penn.	
Elizabeth	23	Penn.	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
79 John Hutchinson	45	Penn.	
Caroline	34	Penn.	
80 Michael Hower	36	Penn.	
Mary	34	Penn.	
81 Nicholas Hower	26	Penn.	
Sophia N.	24	New York	
Reuben Fisher	32	Penn.	
Sarah	23	Penn.	
Leonard	88	Penn.	
82 Loring Parsons	46	New York	769
Almira	47	Vermont	
83 John Lomison	42	Penn.	
Sarah	42	Penn.	
84 Stephen Ercanbrac	26	Penn.	
Hester	23	Penn.	
Charles Ercanbrac	38	Penn.	
Elizabeth	35	Penn.	
85 William G. Taylor	28	Mass.	
Josephine	25	Vermont	
86 Walter Foster	69	Ireland	
87 Luther Carleton	41	Vermont	770
Grace	40	New York	
88 Peter Everett	40	Penn.	
Lunney	35	Ohio	
John Hise	63	Penn.	
Margaret	62	Penn.	
89 Abigail Abbott	63	Mass.	
Sally	64	Mass.	
90 Robert Campbell	52	Scotland	
Jane	53	Scotland	
91 Amos Alexander	40	Penn.	
Nancy	40	Penn.	
92 John Hise	24	Penn.	
Frances	20	Penn.	
93 Jacob Hinebaugh	60	Penn.	
Barbara	26	Penn.	
94 Harvey Keeney	46	New York	
Sarah Ann	32	New York	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
95 Samuel Citterman (Cotterman)	39	Penn.	771
Charlotte	40	Penn.	
96 Benjaman Perrin	34	New York	
Louisa A.	31	New York	
97 Nicholas Bright	30	Penn.	
Mary Ann	30	Penn.	
98 Enos Osborne	24	New York	771
Martha	18	New York	
99 David Bexley	31	New York	
Elizabeth	20	New York	
100 Alvin Wescott	27	New York	
Fanny E.	28	New York	
Asa Day	29	Michigan	772
101 Edward Neddo	22	New York	
Rebecca Ann	18	Michigan	
102 Reuben Smalley	31	Michigan	
Almeda	26	Michigan	
103 William Smalley	22	New York	
Sarah Catherine	65	New Jersey	
104 Amos R. Kellog	35	New York	
Eliza	25	New York	
105 William M. Adams	40	Penn.	
Amelia	34	New York	
106 Lawrence Keep	31	Canada	
Louisa	28	New York	
107 David Osborne	54	New York	
Polly	48	New York	
108 John Laird	25	Ohio	
Jane	22	New York	
109 Freeman Smalley	37	New Jersey	
Emily	22	Penn.	
110 Sarah Norton	47	Vermont	
Lydia Clark	72	Conn.	
Harriet Clark	37	New York	
Elsie Huntington	40	New York	
111 Hiram Case	31	New York	773
Laura	27	New York	
Myers Mattox	21	Ohio	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
112	Nathan Osborne	47	New York	
	Mercy	45	New York	
113	Isaac Smalley	30	New York	
	Elizabeth	21	New Jersey	
114	Samuel P. Larkins	44	New York	
	Maria L.	36	New York	
115	Solomon Strong	66	New York	
	Ruth	63	New York	
	Asael Potter	87	New York	
116	James H. Singleton	32	Ireland	
	Maria	25	Ireland	
	Peter Paterson	77	Scotland	
117	Moses O'Brien	37	Ireland	
	Bridget	29	Ireland	
118	Margaret Goodenburg	42	New Jersey	774
	John Staley	22	New Jersey	
119	Cornelius Hill	38	New Jersey	
	Elizabeth	38	New Jersey	
120	Isaac Collar	41	Penn.	
	Harriet	34	Penn.	
121	Charles Fox	41	New York	
	Elizabeth	31	New York	
122	Israel Palmer	32	New York	
	Christianna	27	New York	
123	Charles I. Wilson	23	Penn.	
	Angentine S. R.	23	Ohio	
124	Benjamin L. Kelley	24	Penn.	
	Margaret	21	Penn.	
125	Alexander Troyer	45	Penn.	
	Mary	34	Penn.	
126	Merritt Tappan	26	New York	775
	Alivira	20	New York	
127	Albino Castle	35	Conn.	
	Eunice M.	32	Conn.	
128	George Shook	30	Penn.	
	Eliza	28	New York	
129	John Olburne	40	Penn.	775
	Martha	40	Penn.	
	David Shranger	26	Penn.	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
130 Franklin Davis	40	Penn.	
Mary Ann	40	Penn.	
131 Samuel Moriere (Mowrer)	40	Penn.	
Eliza	27	Penn.	
132 Amos Casper	27	Penn.	
Cymantha	20	New York	
Daniel Casper	22	Penn.	
133 John Wilcox	45	Penn.	776
Elizabeth	39	New York	
134 Abram Lamberson	40	Penn.	
Ann Maria	29	Penn.	
135 Danford Ballou	48	New York	
Cynthia	42	New York	
Seth Ballou	75	Conn.	
136 John B. Budman	45	Penn.	
Sarah	16	Penn.	
137 Peter Blue	32	Penn.	
Catherine	29	Penn.	

Burr Oak Township

In 1831 Samuel Haslet and family accompanied by George Miller, settled in Burr Oak township. Among the first to come to Burr Oak were the Livermores, Sanburns, Stowells, Weavers, James L. Bishop, Sidney Carpenter and the Kibbes.

Burr Oak is one of the best agricultural townships in the county. Orman Coe and Lewis Austin made the first land entries in 1831. The village of Burr Oak was not laid out until 1851. It was platted by Henry Weaver on land owned by William Lock. Its first house was erected by William Betts in 1850. Its first tavern was kept by Julius A. Thompson in 1851. The village was incorporated in 1859, with E. J. Goff, president.

The following record is a certified copy of the "Census of 1850," volume 9, pp. 681-696. Census Bureau Washington. It gives the name and abode, age and birthplace of residents in Burr Oak township, June 1, 1850. The number preceeding the name indicates the family in the "order of enumerators visitation."

Name	Age	Place of birth	Page
1 Clark Needham	39	Vermont	681
Mary T.	37	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
2	Joseph Brooks	53	England	
	Maria	31	New York	
3	John Start	25	New York	
	Hannah	22	New York	
4	Samuel Richardson	23	New York	
	Mary	23	New York	
	Eleazer	63	New York	
	Elizabeth	64	New York	
5	Richard Houston	47	New York	
	Elizabeth	39	New York	
6	Emile R. Weaver	35	New York	
	Olive	35	New York	
	Robert Gibson	67	England	
7	Lucius W. Bryant	27	Vermont	682
	Pulchera	24	New York	
	Samuel J. Graham	24	New York	
8	William C. Bryant	29	Vermont	
	Eliza B.	21	New York	
9	Arthur Washburn	40	New York	
	Axy	38	New York	
10	Charles R. Monroe	46	Mass.	
	Clarissa	47	New York	
11	Charles Dean	29	New York	
	Polly	20	New York	
12	Alfred Benedict	40	New York	
	Cyntha	30	Ohio	
	Martha Benedict	67	New York	
13	James Engle	36	New York	
	Margaret	31	New York	
14	Samuel Needham	38	Vermont	683
	Nancy	40	Vermont	
	Thomas A. Dickinson	86	Conn.	
	Virsula	52	Vermont	
15	Hannah Trussell	57	N. H.	
16	George Harty	37	Penn.	
	Ann	32	Penn.	
17	Elijah Lancaster	39	Conn.	
	Maria	27	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
18	Benjamin Farley	59	Mass.	
	Harriet	54	New Jersey	
	William Betts	26	Canada	
	Jane	24	New York	
19	Juluis A. Thompson	46	New York	
	Theodosia	42	New York	
	Joy W. (m)	49	New York	
20	Sanford Lathrop	50	Conn.	
	Harriet	44	Ohio	
21	Luther Graves	27	New York	
	Eliza	27	New York	
22	Phenneas Sheldon	35	Vermont	684
	Lucinda	29	New York	
23	Joel North	50	New York	
	Lucy	40	New York	
24	John Start	61	N. H.	
	Martha	61	N. H.	
25	Charles Betts	27	Canada	
	Elizabeth	32	Vermont	
26	James Warder	25	New York	
	Louise	29	Vermont	
	Albert Hutchinson	38	Vermont	
	Artemas French	23	New York	
	Sophia Letter	74	Vermont	
27	Minerva Slocum	39	New York	
28	Henry Buys	32	New York	
	Hannah	26	New York	
29	Daniel Buys	29	New York	684
	Adeline	22	New York	
30	Julia Ann Whitney	30	New York	685
	Betsey Runyon	64	New York	
31	Hiram Lockwood	28	New York	
	Mary	25	New York	
32	Olive Low	71	Mass.	
	Charles Kibble	35	New York	
	Julia A.	35	New York	
33	Israel Neguz	34	New York	
	Atlas E.	31	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
34	Seneca Ross	40	New York	
	Olive	20	New York	
	Cornelia	44	New York	
35	James Filkins	40	New York	
	Eliza	40	New York	
36	Ai Powers	58	Vermont	
	Sybil	51	Conn.	
	Israel Filkins	34	New York	
37	Henry Weaver	37	Mass.	
	Amy Ann	35	New York	
38	John Filkins	84	New York	686
	Abigail	50	New York	
	Stephen	45	New York	
39	Amy Weaver	65	New York	
40	Lewis Cross	32	New York	
	Sybil	21	New York	
41	Henry Swift	44	New York	
	Eliza Boughton	35	New York	
42	Leonard Cross	55	New York	
	Mary	21	New York	
43	William Locke	48	Penn.	
	Rachel	35	Penn.	
	Rebecca Gardner	80	Penn.	
44	Richard L. Jenkins	57	England	686
	Ann M.	51	New York	
45	Jason Kibbie	62	New York	
	Polly	60	New York	
	Lucinda Colton	25	Penn.	
46	Nathan Hackett	33	New York	687
	Sarah	30	New York	
47	William Collett	58	England	
	Electa	59	New York	
48	John Hackett	28	New York	
	Ellen	26	New York	
49	John Benedict	31	New York	
	Laura	26	New York	
50	Lawrence R. Greene	38	New York	
	Maria	29	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
51	Alvah E. Stowell	44	N. H.	
	Jane	42	New York	
52	Joseph C. Stowell	39	N. H.	
	Clara E.	38	New York	
	Elijah	71	New Hampshire	
53	James B. Pepper	32	Penn.	
	Axy Ann	25	Vermont	
54	Calvin Cowles	50	New York	688
	Rachel	49	New York	
55	Gideon Lourborn		Vermont	
	Jane	35	Mass.	
56	Reuben W. Trusell	26	Vermont	
	Wealthy Ann	22	New York	
57	Chester Ward	43	New York	
	Lydia	38	New York	
58	Peter Whitney	39	Maine	
	Laura	27	New York	
59	Arthur Washburn	65	Conn.	
	Betsey	62	Conn.	
60	Benjamin Marks	42	New York	
	Clementina	32	New York	
61	Remington Whitney	48	Maine	688
	Rhoda	33	New York	
62	Joseph Buckrule (Bucknell?)	50	England	689
	Sarah	41	England	
63	Amasa H. Johnson	33	New York	
	Hannah	61	New York	
64	Hulburt Brown	38	New York	
	Sally	28	New York	
65	Albert L. Upham	32	New York	
	Elizabeth	31	New York	
66	Sydney Carpenter	40	Mass.	
	Amanda J.	18	New York	
67	Barnabas Porter	46	New York	
	Mary	39	New York	
68	Freeman Upham	28	Mass.	
	Olive	28	New York	
69	John Sickles (Sickler?)	36	New York	
	Eliza	28	New York	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
70 James Sickles (Sickler?)	57	New Jersey	
Eleanor	57	New York	
John D. Vine (Devine)	45	New York	
71 William Clarke	45	New York	690
Sarah	35	New York	
72 David Merritt	46	New York	
Sally	45	New York	
73 Edgar C. Sampson	30	New York	
Lucy J.	33	New York	
74 Anson Upsham	34	Mass.	
Caroline	28	New York	
75 Solomon Howe	26	New York	
Anna	27	Ohio	
76 Jophtha M. Bolt	41	New York	
Jane	36	New York	
Mary Hotchkiss	85	New York	690
Hiram Hotchkiss	58	Conn.	
77 Benjamin F. Boots	25	New York	
Mary A.	24	New York	
78 Alonzo Norton	43	Penn.	
Nancy	35	Penn.	
79 Calvin A. Wright	36	New York	691
Sally M.	34	New York	
80 Cyrus M. Atchinson	43	New York	
Julia Ann	27	New York	
81 John Johnson	43	England	
Ann	32	England	
82 Joshua West	35	Ohio	
Jerusha	29	Ohio	
83 Eli Stone	38	Ohio	
Sally	40	Ohio	
84 Winard Miller	57	New York	
Polly	56	New York	
85 George Miller	30	New York	
Lucy	30	New York	
86 Francis Weld	27	New York	692
Jane	27	New York	
87 William H. Patchin	36	New York	
Jane	28	New York	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
88 John Hoagland	41	New York	
Margaret	30	New York	
89 Melvin Gates	26	New York	
Sarah	48	New York	
90 James S. Tisdall	42	Conn.	
Alva	29	New York	
Abigail	65	Conn.	
91 William Safford	57	New Jersey	
Margaret	52	New Jersey	
92 George W. Moore	44	Mass.	
93 William Lafford	28	Canada	
Mary E.	24	New York	
Elizabeth Graves	49	New York	
94 Thomas J. Reid	73	Penn.	693
Mary	45	Penn.	
95 Harrison Platt	31	New York	
Adeline	25	New York	
96 Samuel Mathews	27	Virginia	
Lucinda Ann	23	Virginia	
97 William Bayles	55	Virginia	
Amelia	52	Virginia	
98 George Bayles	35	Virginia	
Lucinda	32	New York	
Joseph Good	27	England	
Alexander Eagle	18	Ohio	
Franklin Bates	24	New York	
99 Lyman Hughes	57	New Hampshire	
Jane	52	New Hampshire	
100 George G. Gilbert	39	England	694
Margaret	36	England	
101 John H. Steer	32	Dist of Columbia	
Mary H.	32	Ohio	
102 James Jones	43	New York	
Lucy Ann	42	New York	
Sylvia French	22	Ohio	
103 Walter D. Plumb	38	New York	
Didaina	39	New York	
104 Edmund L. Arridon (Amidon?)	40	Vermont	
Emeline P.	35	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
105	Joseph Harrison	29	England	
	Polly	30	New York	
106	Francis B. Warren	50	Conn.	695
	Esther	40	New York	
107	Miles Bunheft	60	England	
	Sarah	61	England	
108	Charles Adams	51	Conn.	
	Adeline	49	Conn.	
109	Otis W. Rice	34	Mass.	
	Lodaisce	42	Canada	
110	William Thrall	52	New York	695
	Sarah A.	33	New Hampshire	
111	James L. Bishop	51	Conn.	
	Mary	51	Mass.	
	Samuel Bishop	81	Conn.	
	Rebecca	54	Conn.	
112	Erastus Rice	39	Mass.	
	Frances M.	45	New Hampshire	
113	Ralph T. Fox	22	New York	696
	Cynthia M.	25	New York	
114	Isaac Drake	62	New York	
	Elizabeth	58	New York	
115	Christopher Drake	24	New York	
	Betsy	30	New York	
116	Joseph Wren	41	England	
	Jane	20	New York	
117	Elijah C. Warren	63	Conn.	
	Nancy	59	Mass.	
118	James Wren	31	England	
	Emily	25	New York	
	Vesta Leighton	51	New York	
119	Stephen Cade	24	England	
	Phebe Ann	19	New York	
120	Harrison Kelley	51	Virginia	
	Nancy	48	Kentucky	
	Jarvis Harrison	24	England	

Fawn River

Fawn River at one time a part of Sturgis prairie was first settled by Judge Sturgis and George Thurston. In 1828

Alanson C. Steward joined the settlers and in 1829 Richard Hopkins, Thomas Hall, Lemuel Graham and Samuel Sewart arrived.

It was Lemuel Graham who walked to Monroe, a distance of one hundred and twelve miles, in two days, to record the land he so greatly desired.

Other names of early settlers of Fawn River include: Jacob Knox, Garret Sickles and James Johnson. 1836 brought Capt. Charles Moe, a soldier of 1812, and Joseph Bartholomew, Ebenezer Sweet, who built the first tavern and whose father, a soldier in the Revolution, came with him. F. A. Tisdell, Moses Roberts, Wm. Amidon, James McKerlie, Capt. Philip R. Toll, W. L. Lee and Francis Flanders in 1841.

Among the many Fawn River characters of rugged personality was Captain Moe. An incident is told which shows his patriotism. In church one Sunday the minister, Elder Farley, advocated the doctrine of peace and urged his hearers to turn the other cheek when it came to boundary disputes. He brought his address to a climax as he demanded: "Isn't it better to give up our claim to valueless land than to bring misery of war on two countries?" With no expectation of an answer, the speaker was not a little disconcerted to hear the rumbling base voice of Captain Moe as he indignantly exclaimed: "Not a rock, not a rock, give 'em the bayonet fust."

"Shelter and food and drink" were the three great needs of the pioneers. Many of the immigrants lived in the open, sheltered by the great forest trees, with the covered wagon as home until a more substantial dwelling could be built. Undecided about a location, a family often settled on a hillside and "digging in" formed a half cave, over which branches of trees were placed. More substantial were the bark wigwams patterned after the bark huts of the Indians. The bark of trees fastened together and pinned to a light frame made a comfortable place for a summer.

The records of Fawn River pay special tribute to the heroic women of 1837-38, who during a most devasting epidemic—not forgetting nor neglecting their own households—went through the neighborhood on errands of mercy, carrying cheer to the stricken cabins: Mrs. Philip R. Toll, Mrs. James Johnson, Mrs. Richard Hopkins. Mrs. Charles Moe. Mrs. James McKerlie and Mrs. Bartholomew, the latter the first to die of the epidemic was buried in the little old cemetery on the shores of Sweet Lake.

Vivid descriptions are on file at the public library of pathetic scenes during the cholera epidemic, among them that of Dr. Crosette, who proved himself of "the stuff of which

heroes are made". No other doctor within forty miles, he passed from cabin to cabin, night and day, administering as best he could and was so exhausted that when he was taken sick he had no strength to recover. He died, leaving a wife and six young children. Dr. Sabin of Centerville is another of the scores of physicians, each of whom merits special mention as of those who have given of their lives to the health and welfare of St. Joseph people.

The spirit of the early doctors, animated by the unselfish sympathy which comes from training in the school of hardships and self denial, is well illustrated by stories about Dr. James B. Dunkin, who came from Virginia. It was often very difficult for the settlers to get enough to eat, and much of the time they had no money or its equivalent with which to purchase. At a time of great distress, a neighbor came to him asking to buy grain. "Have you the money", asked the Doctor. "Yes", replied the settler. Then, Dunkin told him: "I cannot sell you grain, you can buy it most anywhere. I am keeping mine for those who have no money and must work".

The old cemeteries bear mute testimony to the lack of physicians in the county, and lack of prompt medical aid because of the great distances necessary to be traveled over prairies and along Indian trails by the few physicians who were here. The members of the Abiel Fellows chapter who have been copying the inscriptions for the vital records are appalled at the number of families whose little children and young mothers were sacrificed in laying the foundation of the civic life in St. Joseph county.

Fawn River was made famous through the life of Captain (afterwards Colonel) Isaac D. Toll, the hero of Cherubusco. He was a descendant of a line of famous fighters. A brief sketch of his life is given in the chapter on St. Joseph's Roll of Honor.

In Fawn River was located one of the pioneer "paper villages" the village of Freedom, on the historic Chicago road. Its one building was the commodious tavern built by the proprietor of Freedom, F. A. Tisdel. Mr. Tisdel was the first postmaster. The tavern changed hands and the dream village did not materialize, though it was the site of many historic scenes. Here Capt. I. D. Toll drilled the recruits for service in the Mexican war. Here, too, occurred the murder of Fanning, a deputy sheriff. And here, in later years, the counterfeiters were captured and their lands confiscated by the county to become the "poor farm" for St. Joseph County.

It is claimed that the first marriage in the township of actual residents was that of John W. Fletcher and Sarah Knox;

the ceremony was performed by Samuel Stewart, Esq., September 1831. If this couple was not entertained "a la charivari" then they were undoubtedly the only ones who escaped the amateur orchestra of horse-fiddles, cowbells, and the inconceivable racket produced through use of the mill-gudgeon, with which the rollicking woodsmen always entertained the newlyweds.

Sherman

On November 5th, 1829, the township of Sheman was organized and received its name from Col. Benjamin Sherman. It then included Sherman, Sturgis, Fawn River, Burr Oak, Nottawa and Colon. Gradually other townships were formed from it. In 1838 Burr Oak was set off, Sturgis in 1845. It is a township of many lakes: Chapin lake, named for David Chapin, an early settler; Crossman lake; Thompson's lake for Elijah Thompson; the other lakes are Johnson, Fish, Crotch and Middle lakes.

The first white settler was Thomas Cade, a native of England. He had the most pretentious log cabin in the county. With impressive manner befitting so great an expense, it was whispered: "That cabin cost just one hundred dollars in gold". A most extravagant outlay.

Other settlers in Sherman included David Petty, Andrew and Benjamin Perrin, Adonijah Foot, David Chapin, Mrs. John Gifford and a long list of others.

In later years, Sherman was one of the first townships to cultivate mint. It was introduced in Sherman township, in 1846, by Eric Jones who claimed to have built the first mint distillery in the county. Florence and Nottawa townships likewise lay claim to honors in the development of the mint industry. Mint is as native to St. Joseph county as the Indians or mound builders.

Though an old Greek myth informs us that the goddess Persephone, in a fit of jealous rage, turned her beautiful rival, the nymph Mintha, into the fragrant herb which we call "mint", an equally interesting Indian myth concerns the origin of the plant and tells us that the Indians' fiery "fever god" was controlled through enchantment by a Pottawatomie Indian princess in whose foot prints there grew a plant whose crushed leaves exorcised the evil power of the fever god.

Botanists claim that along the much trodden paths of immigration there are always found immigrant plants: plaintain, called by the sharp eyed Indians "Englishman's foot," mullein, nettle, henbane, wormwood and many others—all English immigrants.

In 1890 at least one fifth of the world's supply of mint came from St. Joseph county, and the industry has steadily

developed. The Indians and earliest settlers placed among their prized medicinal herbs: spearmint, peppermint, pennyroyal, lemon scented bergamot, lavender while almost all of the mint family were held important for household use—especially peppermint for then, as now, peppermint "made into oyle of peppermint is useful to annoynt for vanityes of the head in cases of colds with fever."

The Pioneer and Historical collections for 1891 contain an article by the late Calvin Starr of Centerville, in which he states: "The cultivation of peppermint was commenced in 1836 by M. Sawyer on White Pigeon Prairie. In 1837, before he had extracted any oil, he sold out to Clover and Earl. The process of obtaining the oil was steeping the herb in a kettle."

Frank Royce of Florence tells of his father's invention of a steam process, the first used in the county, to obtain the oil. Nearly every pioneer family raised its own mint, stories about which are related by the Majors, Royces, Fletchers, Franciscoes, Ortons and many other families. For years the cultivation and the distillation were handled mostly by Henry Hall and H. D. Cushman of Three Rivers, George Keech of Centerville, A. M. Todd of Nottawa and A. P. Emory of Mendon.

About 1880, A. M. Todd, of Nottawa, introduced the cultivation of English mint in St. Joseph county and so successful had been his work that he won the sobriquet of the "Peppermint King". Albert May Todd was born in the Todd homestead in Nottawa township in 1850, and is the son of Alfred and Mary Ann (Hovey) Todd, pioneers of St. Joseph county. Mr. Todd was graduated from the Sturgis high school and latter attended Northwestern University. He married Augusta M. Allman of Sturgis in 1878. In 1894, Mr. Todd was Prohibition nominee for governor, and in 1897 was elected to congress from St. Joseph county.

Mr. Todd moved to Kalamazoo and in his residence there has won distinction as a collector of art treasures. By his generous loans and gifts of paintings, porcelains, etc. to public institutions of Kalamazoo, he has become one of that city's most philanthropic citizens. "Who's Who in America", 1931, gives the additional information that Mr. Todd is a writer on the theme of municipal ownership, and "as president of the A. M. Todd company, is at present engaged in growing aromatic and medicinal plants and extracting their essential oils and alkaloids."

The reminiscences of an early physician prove that the pioneers grew medicinal plants and extracted their essential oils and juices. The root of the lady-slipper became a decoction used as a nervine; the innerbark of the yellow and

white oak was used in place of quinine; extract of butternut bark was substituted for calomel. The early physician, far from druggist supplies, was compelled to use substitutes when the "sickly seasons" emptied his medicine chest of all remedies except the native herbs that grew profusely in St. Joseph county. Ague was the bane of health, not only in Sherman but all other townships.

To read the old letters written by the early settlers concerning their common foe "fever 'n chill" is to have a higher regard for the lowly mint and the Indians who introduced it to the settlers. In all the letters of the settlers, the ague held a prominent place. "Fever an' Ague" were not mentioned with any flippancy by the immigrants. It was their first step towards citizenship in Michigan. "Shivers that came faster and faster and grew colder and colder as their icy undulations coursed down their spine. After an hour in the frigid zone where the life was all but shaken out of you, you gradually increased with heat until you reached the torrid zone. Then suddenly it was gone for the day. When the Indians had it, it shook all the 'whoop' out of them. The ague of today is but a dull, tamed and uninterestingly domesticated variety in comparison. Gone are the grand old times."

Not only was mint and other herbs introduced by the Indians but suitable material for wearing apparel and food easily obtained by the early settlers. A chapter on the beginning of the white man's civilization in St. Joseph county would not be just if it did not acknowledge his indebtedness to the red man's contributions. From the Indians the white man learned the secret of tanning. The Indians were superior tanners. They used the "brain and smoke" process. "The cellular envelope of animals brains was dissolved in warm water, the hide was cleaned and then washed in the solution until thoroughly saturated, then it was hung up in dense smoke. The buckskin so treated was scoured with stone and when found to be soft was ready to be made into any kind of apparel. The Indian-tanned-buckskin was best adapted for use in pioneer life.

Florence

Florence township was organized in 1827 at the home of Giles Thompson. Its first settlers included David Crawford who came in 1829. Other of the earliest settlers were: Alvin Calhoun, Jeremiah Lawrence, Norman Roys, John Howard, Elisha Dimick, George Pashby, John Hagerman, John Peek, John Hull, the Rowens, Grays, Yauneys and others.

"Rolling up" a cabin was a difficult process, for it was set in a trench to the depth of two or three feet and stood solidly, a shelter from the forest foes. Upright around

the trench was a closely placed row of logs all of the same length, usually fourteen feet, for a single story, or eighteen if there was to be a loft. The earth was filled in solidly which kept the logs firmly upright. A horizontal band of puncheons, split logs smoothed by the face of an axe, was pinned around within the walls to keep them from caving in. Over this the bark roof, a bark shutter over the window opening, and a bark door hung on with hinges. A luxury added later was the puncheon floor. The settler's wife usually saw to it that the cabin was rolled up around a good flat stump for a table. The bedstead was a platform along one side of the wall or in one corner a heap of hemlock boughs.

One of the interesting features of the old doors was the latch strings hanging outside by which the doors could be opened; by pulling in the string the door was securely locked.

As immigration increased, the security of the cabin built of hewn logs was in greatest favor, especially for those living near the reservations from which came the Indians, drunk or in raiding bands.

After the establishment of saw mills, the plank houses replaced the log cabins in popular favor—their rough surfaces were "most tastefully covered with newspapers which had been carefully saved for the purpose."

Concerning the preparation of food and drink—families hoarded their treasured receipts. Some special method; the secret of some special flavor was handed down from mother to daughter—great amounts of spices were used in the forties and as there was no preservation by ice, perhaps the spices and perfumes were quite necessary. The wild roses and other fragrant flowers of grandmother's day were gathered, not only for their loveliness but to add their fragrance to the "bloom" of the bounce and cordial.

"Housewives pickled fennel and purple cabbage, barberries, elder-buds and many kinds of fish. Their meat was salted and soused, powdered and pickled, and most families owned a smoke house in which beef, ham and bacon were smoked. November was the "killing" month. Sausages, rolliches, headcheese, lard tried and tallow saved, skins dressed and fur garments fashioned." In the fall also the bee hunter cut the bee trees. The honey and maple sugar sweetened the cup which cheers, though "the cup" was brewed from raspberry leaves, golden rod, sage or other plants, and coffee made of parched rye dried in molasses.

Dried corn, stewed pumpkins, pumpkin bread, peas, squashes, beans, parsnips, huckleberries, wild strawberries, wild crabapples were gathered. The making of the autumn's crop of apples into dried apples—their slices strung on long

linen threads and hung from the attic rafters; the huge copper kettles boiling down apple butter preceded by the apple parings. "A cheerful kitchen with an array of empty pans, tubs and baskets; sharp knives and heaped up barrels of apples. A circle of laughing faces above skillful hands. The next day the stout crane in the open fireplace on which hung the brass kettles—sour apples in the bottom since they required more time; quinces added for flavor, molasses for sweetening."

Miss Ruth Hoppin wrote of the vegetables and fruits: "The fruit was picked from the field and swamp--strawberries, huckleberries and cranberries. Gardens and fields were luxuriant; melons were brought in by the bushel basket, and after the corn was cut in the fall there was a great display of the golden pumpkins. That almost forgotten fruit was made into pies, stewed for sauce, was dried and made into pumpkin butter, and a toothsome corn bread known as pumpkin Johnny cake."

The Indians gave the white settler the simple, original method of curing meat over coals. When sprinkled with salt and placed in layers it kept for a long time; or covered with tallow, the preservation extended indefinitely. "Dried venison, deer's tallow suspended in 'cases' and festooned in the smoke of the lodge high up near its funnel mouth", "Corn, tobacco, beans, were Indian gifts, these and succotash were the Indians' contribution to cookery. They sustained many a pioneer during the hardships of the thirties.

Census of 1850, St. Joseph County, Michigan

Florence Township, Vol. 9, pp. 620-637.

Note: The original spelling has been followed.

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
783	Robert Melburn	35	England	620
	Pleasant	26	England	
784	William Melburn	70	England	
	Mary	70	England	
	Richard	40	England	
785	John Cotton	36	England	
	Jenny	32	England	
786	Benjamin Whitaker	37	Penn.	
	Sophronia	31	Penn.	
	Margaret Barclay	22	Penn.	
787	Amos Gale	37	Penn.	
	Mary	37	Penn.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
788	Nathan Kain	40	New York	
	Lucy	34	New Hampshire	
	Susan	30	New York	
789	Aaron Blue	53	Penn.	
	Anna	49	Penn.	
790	William Laird	58	Penn.	621
	Anna	56	Penn.	
	John Bellair	40	England	
791	George Dicenson (Dickison?)	37	England	
	Sarah	28	England	
	Mary A. Bowen	18	England	
	Sammie Everson	30	England	
792	William Dicenson	42	England	
	Ann	39	England	
793	Richard Wade	57	England	
	Ekanor	56	England	
794	Ostin S. Rawly	30	New York	
	Ellener	24	England	
795	George Johnson	42	England	
	Harriett	41	England	
796	Richard M. Johnson	65	England	
	Georgia	33	England	
797	Henery Seavian	24	Penn.	
	Ann	19	England	622
798	Samuel Hatcher	46	England	
	Martha	44	England	
799	Thomas Fountain	30	England	
	Mary Tasker	40	England	
800	William Thompson	40	England	622
	Elisabeth	41	England	
801	William Breden	43	England	
	Mary	47	England	
	Ellen Burnam	21	England	
	John Underwood	29	England	
	Robert Richardson	30	England	
802	Charles R. Holmes	29	New York	
	Mary	33	England	
	James	23	England	
	William H. Ray	28	Unknown	

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
803 Thomas Bradly	40	England	
Sarah	31	England	
Joseph Thompson	16	England	
804 George Ross	52	England	
Elisabeth	51	England	
805 John Jackson	60	England	
Milcah	63	England	
George Jackson	30	England	
806 John Struble	28	Penn.	623
Ruth	23		
807 William Barnard	64	England	
Elisa	52	England	
Elisabeth Hablet	18	Cannida	
808 Samuel S. Hart	52	New York	
Nancy	51	New York	
809 John Putman	27	New York	
Caroline	27	New York	
John	79	Mass.	
810 Joseph Gaston	59	England	
Sarah	60	England	
William Masterman	29	Michigan	
811 Richard Gaston	54	England	
Margaret	42	England	
812 William Garnet	59	England	
Rebecca	49	England	
813 Oliver Arnold	33	New York	
Jane	25	New York	
814 Inman Arnold	59	New York	624
Narcissa	58	New York	
815 John Masterman	35	England	624
Alice	30	England	
816 Samuel A. Thompson	26	Ohio	
Mary J.	22	New York	
817 John Greensides	35	England	
Elisabeth	38	England	
818 Hinman Bidwell	53	New York	
Lydia	53	New York	
Lydia Wilett	79	New York	
819 John Tennison	23	England	
Loreta	24	Ohio	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
820	Giles Tompson	58	Conn.	
821	William Wade	60	England	
	Hannah	59	England	
	Joseph Gorton	30	England	
	George Peacock	50	England	
822	John Hull	34	New York	
	Mary A.	33	New Hampshire	
	Henery Wills	18	New York	
823	George Pushby (Pashby)	37	England	625
	Jane	40	England	
824	Hiram G. Tompson	32	Cannida	
825	Stephen Wilett	50	New York	
	Sarah	43	New York	
	George Ferndale	25	Virginia	
	Laura	32	England	
826	Robert Pushby (Pashby)	37	England	
	Hannah	28	England	
827	Debra Patterson	60	Vermont	
	Christianna Hull	30	New York	
828	Zera Benjamin	45	New York	
	Anna	45	New York	
	Altemus Porter	23	New York	
	Lenora	22	New York	
829	James Blair	27	New York	
	Mariah	24	Ohio	626
830	John Rumford	55	New Hampshire	
	Patty	47	New York	
831	John Shepard	32	New York	
	Mary A.	29	New York	
832	Hiram Hart	23	New York	626
	Caroline	19	Nova Scotia	
833	Jacob Micles	30	New Jersey	
	Mercy	32	New York	
834	Henery Van Buren	48	New York	
	Hannah	38	New York	
	John Warrick	16	Germany	
835	Jacob Shover	36	Germany	
	Elisabeth	45	New York	
836	Gardner Pitts	56	New York	
	Mariah	53	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
837	Liberty B. More	58	Mass.	
	Malinda	53	New York	
838	Horace More	31	New York	
	Philena	25	New York	
839	Gardner W. Pitts	28	New York	
	Marietta	21	Mass.	
840	Warren Warden	57	Rhode Island	
	Betsy	56	New Hampshire	
841	John Graham	49	Ireland	627
	Mary	35	Penn.	
842	Hiram R. Pitts	32	New York	
	Elisa	31	Vermont	
843	Jacob G. Grey	35	New York	
	Martha	17	Unknown	
844	Ephram M. Adams	39	New York	
	Rachel	32	New Jersey	
845	Abel White	34	Penn.	
	Ester	32	Penn.	
846	John Adam	33	New York	
	Mary	31	New Jersey	
847	Isaac Mills	56	New Jersey	
848	Hiram Benjamin	27	New York	
	Charity	27	New York	
849	James P. Haynes	44	New York	
	Nancy	34	New York	
850	James B. Haynes		New York	
	Harriett	27	New Jersey	628
851	Sumner Steers	36	England	628
	Elisabeth	22	New York	
853	Abrum Calhoun	48	New York	
	Louise	30	Maine	
	Cyntha	21	New York	
	Edwin Cromel	32	New York	
	Oliver Garrison	22	New York	
852	Ephriam Holenbeck	35	New York	
	Mary	34	New York	
854	David Cole	46	Penn.	
	Mary	36	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
855	Daniel Wilson	40	New York	
	Mary A.	38	Ohio	
	William Hull	27	New York	
856	Betsy (Hull?)	27	England	
857	Gilbert Simson	25	New York	629
	Mary A.	22	New York	
858	Daniel Sparks	39	Mass.	
	Lucretia	38	New York	
859	Ralph Stone	32	Mass.	
	Olive	30	New York	
	Walcott Lawrence	18	Michigan	
860	James Woods	29	New York	
	Rosanna	45	New York	
	Asabel Williamson	25	Michigan	
861	William Scobie	60	Scotland	
	Elisabeth	49	England	
862	Samuel Cates	50	England	
	Ann	40	England	
863	Caleb Mosier	52	New York	
	Abigal	40	Conn.	
864	Archibald Ormst	37	Germany	
	Jane	27	Penn.	
865	Thomas Steers	70	England	
	Elisabeth	63	England	
866	Mary Wade	40	England	630
867	Ira Parish	31	New York	
	Catherine J.	27	New York	
868	Aquilla Parish	56	Maryland	
	Eunis	58	Rhode Island	
	Joel Scofield	26	New York	
869	Joseph Anderson	31	Penn.	630
	Eveline	27	Penn.	
870	John E. G. Hathaway	36	Vermont	
	Julia A.	33	Mass.	
871	Albert H. Strong	37	Conn.	
	Ann	33	New York	
872	Nathaniel Craig	36	New Jersey	
	Nancy G.	34	New York	
873	Mariah P. Reed	38	New York	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
874	Morgan Ketcham	45	New York	
	Laura	38	New York	
875	Noah R. Hagerman	22	New York	631
	Rebeca	19	Vermont	
876	John Hagerman	29	New York	
	Susanna	22	Virginia	
877	Michael Hubler	61	Penn.	
	Mary	53	Penn.	
878	Joseph Sweezy	45	New Jersey	
	Christiana	36	New York	
	George Silver	30	England	
	John Hagerman	67	New York	
879	Horace (Hagerman?)	28	New York	
	Elisa	17	Mass.	
880	William Mosier	42	Penn.	
	Rachel	37	Penn.	
	Willis Pence	27	Penn.	
881	William Hagerman	34	New York	
	Lucy A.	32	Ohio	
	Fanny Hagerman	61	New York	
882	M. W. Demick	31	New Jersey	
	Parthenia	27	Mass.	
	Polly Demick	56	New Jersey	
	Mary J. Demick	73	New Jersey	
	M. MacDonald	23	Virginia	
883	John Peck	58	New York	632
	Justic Miller	25	Penn.	
	Mary A Garrison	19	New York	
884	John Howard	68	Conn.	
	Patty M.	65	Conn.	
885	Julian, (Howard?)	35	Conn.	
	Elisa J. (Howard?)	27	New York	
	Ephraim Thomas	22	New York	
	Hannah Hassenger	17	Ohio	
886	O. F. Howard	38	Conn.	
	Cornelia	30	New York	
	Henery Richards	23	New York	
887	John Demick	34	New York	632
	Lydia	23	Mass.	

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
888	Jacob Clute	40	New York	
	Cornelia C.	36	New York	
	Cornelia Gurnson	78	New York	
889	Alexander Ely	34	New York	
	Elisa	26	New York	
890	Nathan Barlow	25	New York	633
	Sally	25	New York	
891	Waldo Smith	50	Conn.	
	Jenny	40	Conn.	
892	Hiram Adams	24	New York	
	Elisabeth	17	New York	
893	Marshall Craw	45	Conn.	
	Eunis	48	New York	
	Orland Mack	22	New York	
	Catherine Murth	20	Ohio	
894	Norman Roice (Roys)	44	Mass.	
	Caroline	29	New York	
895	George L. Roice	40	Mass.	
	Elisabeth	30	New York	
	Daniel Swarts	23	Penn.	
896	Robert Crawford	34	Ohio	
	Genett	27	New York	
897	Allen Tenyson	28	England	
	Mariah	28	England	
898	Altha Lawrence	45	New York	
	Harris Tennyson	25	Michigan	
899	Ashby Wetherby	26	New York	634
	Elisabeth	20	New York	
900	William Ishay (or Isbray?)	28	Conn.	634
	Betsy	23	New York	
901	Thomas M. Woods	32	Penn.	
	Peter B. Philips	27	Maine	
	Elisabeth	27	Penn.	
902	Lyman Blair	52	Maine	
	William McKey	14	Michigan	
	Nancy	50	Maine	
	Aurilla Lyon	24	Maine	
903	Amasser Danniels	60	Conn.	
	Sophia A.	46	Conn.	
905	Susana Halmington	50	Penn.	634

	Name	Age	Place of Birth	Page
905	John S. (Halmington?)	31	Penn.	635
	Sarah M. (Halmington?)	26	Conn.	
906	Lemuel Hammond	42	Conn.	
	Lydia	39	New York	
	Wallace Moshier	18	Unknown	
907	Jane Zurony	48	New York	
	James	21	New York	
908	Henery Pawnsy (Yauney?)	28	New York	
	Adeline	24	New York	
909	William Freeland	60	Mass.	
	Charlotte	38	New York	
910	Joseph Jewit	47	Mass.	
	Mary A.	40	New York	
	Edward DeBoyse	35	New York	
911	Ezra Blogget	77	Conn.	
	Cyntha	62	Vermont	
	Mary A. Becker	20	Conn.	
912	William Hogan	24	Mass.	
	Mary	19	Delaware	
913	John H. Keller	57	New York	
	Margaret	53	New York	
914	George J. Grey	54	New York	636
	Nancy	55	New York	
915	Lewis McDowell	37	New York	
	Harriett	34	Mass.	
	Orson Dane	20	New York	
916	Jules Ronns	30	Michigan	
	Polly Rhodes	26	Vermont	
917	John Dicker	50	New York	
	Catherine	44	New York	
918	Almond White	45	New York	
	Elsy	38	Penn.	
919	George Clark	56	Penn.	
	Barbary	44	Penn.	
920	Robert Wethrington	29	New York	
	Margaret	29	Penn.	
921	Robert McKinly	47	Scotland	637
	Catherine	39	Scotland	
	Maddison Stumel	21	New York	
922	John Major	40	New York	
	Jane	38	New York	

MENDON

Old Puddleburg, rising in civic dignity, chose in 1845 to be known as Mendon. It was platted by Leander Metha, its first settler, who built a house on the present plat in 1834. In 1844 Brownshon and Doan dammed the Little Portage and established a saw mill.

The township of Mendon at first included parts of Leonidas and Park. Many of its early settlers have been mentioned in preceding chapters. Other pioneers include the names of Peter Neddeaux, Moses Taft, Wm. Harrington, Abram H. Voorhees, A. W. Maring, James S. Barnabee, Stephen Barnabee, Fordyce Johnson, Samuel E. Johnson, Rowell, Elisha Foote, the Wakemans, Benjamin P. House, N. Chapman, B. B. Bacon, Ephrain Atkinson, James Van Buren, Ira Pellett, Joseph Woodward, Abner Moore, Harvey White, Ezra Brown, Timothy Kimball, Samuel T. Larkin, the Yaples.

The first settlers were Frenchmen and the French influence was dominant for years. Adams Wakeman, after the custom of the times, built a frame house and named it "Queen of the Prairie." The first schoolhouse in the township was built in 1837 and was taught by Wealthy Hunt. In a corner of a field near Bennett's bridge is a rugged weather beaten stone which marks the burial place of the first teacher on the Indian reservation. His name, so far, has not been ascertained.

The first hotel was built by Lewis Lyman.

The Michigan Pioneer collections furnish many stories concerning the early settlers of Mendon township among the most interesting are those compiled by Mrs. Alexander Custard and published in volume 38. The Pioneer Collections may be found in any public library in Michigan.

CHAPTER IX

CONSTANTINE

At Meek's Mills the "F. F. F.'s," "the first five families," included: William Meek, who came from Ohio in 1828-'9; Jacob Bonebright from Pennsylvania in 1829; Nathan Syas in 1830; and Charles B. Fitch from Ohio in 1830. Following closely thereafter were the Cathcarts, Hamiltons, Harwoods, Arnolds and others. It is said that Niles F. Smith, the proprietor of the first store at Meek's Mill, was responsible for its change of name to that of "Constantine" in 1831.

Meek's Mill was one of the pioneer mills of the county and had brought fame to the settlement. The new name of "Constantine" was ignored by the early settlers; especially those of rival settlements who remained oddly oblivious of any such place of high sounding name. When travellers asked about it, they professed no knowledge of such a place.

Niles F. Smith built a small frame building on the banks of the river which he used as a store, 1830-1831. Its basement served for years as the first school room and there his clerk, Thomas Charlton, taught the rudiments of reading and writing and 'rithmetic. Charlton's real bid for fame came later as Justice of the Peace, in which capacity he served for many years.

St. Joseph county turns with pride to the records of Constantine men who have attained state and national fame: Governor John S. Barry, Governor John T. Bagley, Major General Frank D. Baldwin, M. H.; Major General H. H. Bandholtz, Provost Marshall in the World War; his son Col. C. H. Bandholtz; to judges, legislators, congressmen; and to the Rev. Edward Evans, "Soldier of the Cross and of the American Revolution."

In the Michigan Pioneer Collection, an incident concerning "Meek's Mill" in 1831, is given by Enos Northrup. Mr. Northrup wrote that his first crop of wheat harvested in Michigan was a grist of twenty-two bushels and the nearest mill, Constantine, fifty miles distant. He started with two yoke of oxen. He forded the Kalamazoo, Portage and St. Joseph rivers as he followed the Indian trail to the mill. When night came he tied a bell to the oxen and let them go untethered and he slept on the bare ground rolled up in his blanket. At daylight he began hunting for the oxen and continued to hunt all day, the next day he hired an Indian and for two days continued the hunt, then believing they had returned home, he turned back and reached home Saturday night, only to find that the cattle had not been seen.

Monday morning he started again, this time on horse back with more provisions, but at Prairie Ronde he hired some

one to take the grist to mill while he continued to search for the cattle. After sixteen days they were found in a marsh north of Kalamazoo. In his absence the family had lived on bread made from wheat ground in a coffee mill and sifted thru a hand sieve.

Among the many families of Constantine of whom interesting stories are on file, is that of the Caleb Arnold family, who came to St. Joseph county in the forties. Caleb was the son of Abimeleck Arnold, a soldier of the American Revolution, who served in the 13th New York militia under Colonel Cornelius Van Veghten for the full period of the war. One hundred and fifty years afterwards with a world at war, the name of his great-great-grandson, George Otis West, was inscribed on the honor roll of American war records of heroes; a boy of twenty years, a first lieutenant in the 49th Air Squadron, who gave his life for his country, as his plane fell behind the German lines near Campaneau, France.

Caleb Arnold with his wife came to St. Joseph county in 1832. Among their children were Daniel, who later made Constantine his home; Otis, Orrin, and William F. of Three Rivers; and Mrs. Tracy of Constantine.

Caleb was twenty years of age when he settled in Fabius township. As the years went by he became one of the most influential pioneers. His integrity was unquestioned. He served for twelve years as a justice of the peace and as supervisor for 18 years. Otis Arnold, with his wife, were substantial members of the early Methodist church in Three Rivers. They were the parents of George H. and Edith (Arnold) West. In 1834 William F. married Rhoda, daughter of Deacon Churchill. They moved to Three Rivers in 1854. Of the children of William, Lucy became the wife of George W. Buck; the other children include Cornelia (Mrs. Alexander Ennis); Sarah (Mrs. William H. Gable); Philo; Edwin P.; and Frank M. In 1856 William Arnold married as second wife, Mrs. Margaret J. Green, had a son, Ira B. William Arnold, died in 1890.

Constantine Memorial Pergola

The Woman's Club of Constantine erected a pergola as a memorial to the pioneers who were buried in the first burial grounds of Constantine, located at Mill street and Florence road. The columns of the pergola are the Doric columns which once adorned an old pioneer tavern, "The Homestead." On each of the center columns are bronze tablets on which are inscribed the names of the pioneers and the dates of their settlement in Constantine:

1829: Meek, Bonebright, Syas.

1830-1840: Appleton, Arnold, Bagley, Barry, Bates, Briggs, Bryan, Cathcart, Chamberlain, Clinton, Crego, Driggs.

1830-1840:Francisco, Gladding, Hagenback, Hageman, Hamilton, Harrison, Harvey, Harwood, Hull, Jackson, Joss, Ketcham, Lintz, McEntaffer, Mitchell.

1830-1840: Patterson, Proudfit, Putman, Root, Smith, Stafford, Stears, Tuesdale, Thurber, Tracy, Watchterhauser, Welch, Wells, Williams.

1840-1855: Barnard, Bradshaw, Bush, Cotton, Coffinberry, Denco, Butch, Gibson, Hammond, Hotchin, Knowlin, Langley, Merrill, Moore, Riley, Thayer, Wagner.

A carved seat of stone near the pergola has a small bronze name plate inscribed, "In Memorium Marion Stafford Wooster".

Eschol

Among the villages platted in Constantine township was the village of Eschol. The records show that this, the deserted village of St. Joseph, was located on the Fitch farm, later the property of Charles Houser, three miles south of Three Rivers. It was platted by Judge Charles Fitch and Asa Wetherbee from a survey made by John S. Barry in 1833.

Concerning the platters, Judge Charles B. Fitch, was born in Connecticut, in 1774. He was the grandson of the famous Hon. Thomas Fitch, Governor of Connecticut under British rule. Hezekiah Fitch son of Thomas, served with the American forces during the Revolution, in the Seventh Connecticut regiment. He enlisted July 8, 1775. The family numbers among its prized possessions, his sword which bears the inscription: "Hezekiah Fitch, 1764" Charles B. Fitch was a son of Hezekiah, he served in the war of 1812 on Lake Erie. Charles and his son Samuel both served in the Black Hawk war under Captain Calhoun. Accompanied by his family Judge Fitch settled in St. Joseph county in 1830. He "entered five eighties of government land on Pigeon prairie, and the following year entered two hundred acres in Buck's township". For several years Mr. Fitch served as a circuit judge in St. Joseph county.

The partner of Judge Fitch, Asa Wetherbee (1800-1877), was the son of Richard (1768-1848) and his wife Susannah Sweet Wetherbee (1778-1813). Asa was descended from John Wetherbee who immigrated to Woburn, Massachussetts, from England, about 1680.

In 1832 Judge Fitch built a dam across the Prairie river (Hog Creek) near the outlet into the St. Joseph river. This

dam backed the waters of the creek until they overflowed the lowlands near the present location of the New York Central bridge. It made a millpond where now the river road crosses the marsh. The mill race flowed through the ravine which forms the approach to the Drumhiller bridge.

The mill race made an island of about sixty acres of highland, on which stood the hamlet of Eschol. "Where the race entered the St. Joseph, Judge Fitch installed a busy water wheel to drive a saw mill, later a shingle mill and two run of small gristing stones. In 1838 R. M. Welch added a carding machine.

For a time the little village flourished and was a rival of the newly founded town of Three Rivers. In 1840 the dam went out, never to be rebuilt. Litigation followed. Buildings were vacated, the town deserted.

A few century-old apple trees, planted by Judge Fitch, a lilac bush growing on the high hillside which over looks the river, are all that remains of the little village of Eschol.

Stories of its people, however, appeal to the imagination, especially those concerning Benjamin M. King, "Cobbler of Eschol." Benjamin King and his pretty young bride, in May 1832, made their home in the prospective village of Eschol. In that same year he was drafted for the Black Hawk war and with Samuel Fitch and others of St. Joseph county, served one month at White Pigeon. In 1833 Mr. King with Daniel Arnold, of the famous Hull and Arnold band, rented a room and worked at shoe making. He came to Three Rivers in 1834 and lived in the first house erected by a white man, that of Jacob McInterfer. In 1835 he built one of the first frame houses in Three Rivers. It occupied the site of the old Frye homestead, on 115 North Main Street. In 1836 he began clearing his farm land two miles southwest of town, giving his evenings to his cobblers trade. In the anti-slavery struggle he was an active participant.

Mr. King was born in Middleton, N. Y. and was christened after his grandfather, Benjamin Montayne, a Baptist minister, who served as a post rider in the American Revolution. "He was the trusted confidential agent of General Washington, and was employed to deliver dispatches to the commanders in different sections of the country. The following is his certified service. "When Gen. Washington resolved to destroy the army of General Cornwallis, he deceived the British General Clinton as to his plans by writing deceptive letters to General Green and forwarded them in such a way that they should be captured by the enemy. The letters were entrusted for that purpose to Benjamin Montayne. While traveling on horseback across Bergen County, N. J. he

was captured by the British Rangers. . . His horse was shot and he was hurried to the infamous sugar-house prison. The British considered the capture so important that they illuminated their houses. At the same time Washington was making the movement which terminated in the surrender of Corwallis. As a prisoner Montayne was exchanged for three British soldiers . . . . which the British considered a fair equivalent."

The following sketch is contributed by H. B. King concerning his grandfather Benjamin Montaign King, pioneer, of Eschol.

"Benjamin Montaign King, one of the early pioneers of St. Joseph county, came to Michigan in 1832. He was a descendant of Clement King who is first mentioned in Marshfield, Massachusetts in 1668. The line goes back as follows:

Clement King, Marshfield, Massachusetts;

James King, Providence, Rhode Island;

Thomas King, Ulster County, New York;

Samuel King, Sr., Lieutenant in the Revolutionary War;

Samuel King Jr.;

Benjamin Montaign King, (1806-1886), m, Martha Wetherbee)

Benjamin M. King related the details of his trip to Michigan, which has been recorded in Volume 5, Michigan Pioneer Collections, a summary of which follows:

He came to Detroit and then took the old Chicago road to Ypsilanti, thence to Saline, Clinton and on to Jonesville. At Jonesville the party was overtaken by General Jacob Brown and one of his aids traveling on horseback. General Brown was on a military expedition to muster together forces enough to fight Black Hawk. Mr. King then proceeded from Jonesville to Bronson, thence to Sturgis Prairie, White Pigeon, and then to Eschol. Mr. King with his bride spent the first winter of '32 and '33 in the village of Eschol. The next year he moved to Constantine. The following year he came to Three Rivers and lived in the first house that was built

"Benjamin M. King lived in Three Rivers for two years and then purchased a hundred and twenty acres of land southwest of Three Rivers, which is now (1930) a part of Shafer Brothers farm. The brick house where Clinton Shafer, Jr. now resides was built by Mr. King just before the Civil War. Mr. King died Sptember 15, 1886, aged seventy-nine

"It is always interesting to know the moving cause of these pioneers coming to a certain location. The moving cause in the case of Mr. King was a Martha Wetherbee, daughter of Richard Wetherbee. Richard Wetherbee had made his plans to immigrate to Michigan and the young couple concluded to cast their lot in the then wilderness of Michigan.

PART III CHAPTER X

OVERLAND

A letter descriptive of early St. Joseph county which pays tribute to the settlers, was written from his office in the General Land Office, Washington, by Allen Goodbridge. A portion of the letter follows:

"St. Joseph rivaled in its beauty the farfamed Arcadia and the Hesperides where grew the golden apples. . . . I have never forgotten the sensations aroused by its scenery on my first visit. . . . in answer to an invitation from my schoolmate and friend, the late Governor John S. Barry, to visit his home at Constantine. . . . I mounted an Indian pony with the aid of my crutch. . . . on a latter day of September. There was nothing very attractive until . . . Prairie Ronde . . . burst upon the view . . . it's beauty struck me with wonder, surprise, delight . . . After passing the prairie and reaching the oak openings I saw for the first time in my life a herd of deer feeding in their own pasture. I counted twenty before they discovered me, but directly every head was erect and away they scampered like the wind.

"The beautiful plain around Three Rivers, ten or twelve miles, was a mat of flowers. I reached Mr. Moore's tavern, exhausted, ill. Mr. Moore was away from home and that excellent woman, his wife, helped me to dismount and ministered most kindly to my comfort while under their roof. At ten o'clock the next morning, I forded the St. Joseph river. At every turn new and beautiful scenes attracted my attention. At Eschol, I saw a floating island in the mill pond. It was covered with grass and bushes and in the center a goodly sized tree. I passed the farms of Deacon Howard and my friend Norman Royce. At last, fatigued, I reached the home of Mr. Barry and his kind hearted wife. They were boarding at the tavern kept by Hunt. In the pleasant days that followed, I met Judge Meek, W. T. House, John G. Cathcart, Elias Swan . . . and others.

"In 1840, as deputy marshall, I assisted in taking the census and for ten years more was in constant association with the men and women, early settlers of the county. I knew them all and as a class, they were intelligent, honest, perservering, industrious and frugal men and women; always ready to help the needy and to promote any enterprise the public interests seemed to require. . . We honor and respect their memory."

Going West in the Forties

In contrast to the pioneers of the "thirties" who sought new homes for themselves and families, many of those who

came in the "forties" were young men, actuated by a love of adventure. One such boy occasioned the "inciting moment" of a domestic drama which had far reaching results for the Silliman family. Samuel Silliman's father, tall, straight, stern, ruled his several six foot sons with Scotch Presbyterian piety, intermixed with a parental authority inherited from a line of Dutch patroons; Samuel, rollicking, daring, good natured, unfortunately was given to the embellishment of his vocabulary with emphatic words, whose use was strictly forbidden by his father.

It so happened one day that Samuel, plowing in the meadow with oxen that would neither "gee" nor "haw", let his inherited Irish temper overcome Scottish discretion, and with a volley of energizing phrases, put to rout the whole Decalog of the Dutch. Picture his consternation as he found his irate father beside him, who gave Samuel his choice, forthwith to take a thrashing or leave home. Twenty years old, six feet four in height! Of course he left home.

At first his letters to his mother were very brief, very dignified in composition; but soon the Spirit of Adventure, disguised as one Billy Morrison, awakened the restlessness of his pioneer blood and the two boys started west to Michigan. His letters of 1845 cover the trip. Arrived in St. Joseph county, he urges the family to migrate.

We read: . . . "Then we arrived in White Pigeon, in Michigan. It is a smart little place. We were at the Huff's two days. White Pigeon is on the cash system, has a hard set of shavers that are not up to the catechism on the Sabbath. Some swear; but you can buy goods as cheaply as you can in Milton. Rents are high. A story and a half house rents for fifty to sixty dollars a year. If you should come you might settle here, but tell father not my will but his be done.

"From White Pigeon we went down the St. Joseph river, which is a beautiful stream, navigable for light craft for 150 miles. Produce is arked down from Oporto and Three Rivers. It cost me $20 to come this far and if one was stingy to himself he could make it on $18.

"Girls have an easy time here. Men carry in the wood and water and even do the milking. Big girls get $1.50 a week and do not do anything but please the children. Fetch some along, Mother—some of the neighbor girls. One anyway."

From LaPorte, Indiana, Samuel wrote: "St. Joseph is the best county I have seen in my travels. I had rather live in its woods than any place. Between Three Rivers and Centreville, it has the best oak openings and too, a fair decentish sort of people.

"Daddy White says to tell you he raised 6,000 bushels of wheat last year and the market wasn't over ten miles away.

"Mother, by all means bring hop yeast along and bake bread along the way or its salt risen' for you,—a half sour stuff that assaults your nose and insults your taster." Won't nowise be held responsible for the boys if it strikes 'um unawares. Keep up your courage, Mother. If you come, money wouldn't hire you to return. Wish I were back to help you pack. Make the boys do the work. You will have fine times coming and when you get here, a cozy little home to welcome you. Not the old stone house, of course, but three rooms and a garret, and I am figgering on hooks on which to hang the boys outside."

The spirit of western hospitality is shown in a letter to the family written by Samuel Ludwig, of Park, who wrote inviting the whole party, sixteen in number, to "put up" with him until they could find a place. The Silliman family left White Deer Valley, Pennsylvania, in 1847 and were four weeks in covered wagons on the way. The odd diary kept by the father, Alexander Silliman, includes even the prescriptions given by the family doctor, anticipating all the ills to which the flesh is heir. We do not know whether these directions were the cause or cure for conditions mentioned in a letter by Thomas Silliman, the oldest son.

"We are in the Black Swamp. Father has the pleurisy, was bled, is better; Mother, Mary Jane and Arthur are having chills; Brady has one every other day. James is keeping up on Jane's alterative."

Eventually the family arrived and settled on the old Buckhorn road. None are left of the group who came from the old stone house in the White Deer valley, but in the old chaise trunk, which came with them, are the overland records and the letters, so carefully treasured by the mother of Samuel, the big rollicking, funloving, pioneer boy.

CHAPTER XI

THE FORTY-NINERS

The lure of gold caught St. Joseph county and it joined in the mad race of the forty-niner's.

The October 20, 1849 issue of the "Western Chronicle", gives a portion of a "forty-niner's" diary kept by Hiram Jacobs, who with John Major, Volney Hotchin, Benjamin Ogden and Robert Ethrington from St. Joseph county arrived in Indian Territory May 15th of that year. We quote one day's record: "This morning after breakfast, while examining the ford of a river, we saw a man on horseback in the distance, then another and another, until the prairie seemed alive with horsemen, all painted and dressed up in Indian style. I was on a sand bar until they began to ford the river at which they dashed at top speed. Our men at camp were taken by surprise when some one reported: 500 Indians are crossing the river! Our company was scattered, some hunting, some in one place, some in another. The Indians galloped into camp. I was at the point of nearest approach; the chief and a number of his warriors made signs to shake hands and I gave them a hearty one and they passed to the others in single file.

"One of our men about ten rods off lost his head and aimed his rifle at the chief and would have shot him if it had not been for the timely interference of Robert Ethrington of Sherman, who, by his presence of mind, saved the chief's life and us the consequences that would have followed.

"One of our men standing on a bluff fired at an Indian and missed him, but he did mortally wound one of our mules. On leaving us, the Indians met our hunters, shook hands and rode on. They came to a man by the name of Rowe, who through fear fired on the Indians and they promptly killed, scalped and cut his face in a terrible manner. We found him . . . and buried him. I went on guard at seven o'clock but no one was sleepy after the events of the day, but it taught us a melancholy lesson".

A letter from John Sturgis of July 26, 1849: "We have crossed the long and dangerous California Desert, which is strewed with dead and dying horses, oxen and mules. We have had the good fortune to get safely through with our teams and loads but it was a hard task; it was only by the skin of our teeth.

"Out of twenty-one wagons in our train, Mr. Raymond's and our own were the only ones that reached the river. Mr. Raymond's company exchanged their heavy wagon at Fort Laramie for a lighter one and were obliged to put all their team to one wagon, throwing away everything that they could

spare. There are about 150 wagons just ahead of us. We passed fifty by the wayside in the desert. They were obliged to unhitch and drive the animals through loose. For forty-five miles we didn't find a spear of grass nor drop of water, and sixty miles before we came to the desert, very little grass and the very worst of water. The next 200 miles will be worse for those who follow for there are from 6,000 to 10,000 teams behind us.

"The dead animals along the way are skinned by a miserable thievish tribe of Indians called "Root Diggers" . . . all along the dry sands we could see the snow on the mountains. We are now fifty-five miles from Fort Hall and 2,350 from home. Tell my friends not to come this way.

"We were fool-hardy for ever attempting the land route. The plain was literally crowded with dead animals, tents, wagons, feather-beds and valuable clothing. It is the south, or Mormon road. Miller, Heverland and Schellhouse brothers are with us.

"The Mormons say there is more gold on the San Joaquin than Sacramento . . . . A few days ago Mr. Taft, brother of Moses Taft of Nottawa, gave us a party. It commenced with prayer, that was followed by music, dancing and other amusements. Women, the Mormons claim, are a necessary evil. Mr. Young, one of the "Twelve", has thirteen wives. They are a bad lot."

Mr. Bishop later describes a skirmish with the Indians who ambushed their party, two of whom were killed, two wounded. "One of those killed was Jonathan Turner from Colon. Jackson and Martin Schellhouse used Johnson's rifle by turns. William Foreman was in the fray. The Indians practically stripped them of their outfit. Seth Taft, Salter and James Brooks returned to join the Mormons. After the skirmish, I found my leg rather painful and got Jackson to cut it open with his knife to find the bullet. He couldn't seem to go deep enough.

"The Mormons overtook us and urged us to return, saying they would re-outfit us; but after we returned the hypocritical cusses never gave a dime. Three weeks from today we start again for El Dorado."

A letter from Sacramento from James H. Voorheis, pictures the prospectors at the mines.

"You must not be surprised when I tell you that many are leaving the country with little more than what they came with. I cannot tell you the reason unless it be indigence. Some come with the expectation of amassing wealth without labor. All such are sorely disappointed. It is the hardest work I ever did to dig gold. You lift rocks of immense weight. Most

of the gold is found in crevices of slate and flat rock. Every man must perform his own labor. He cannot hire. All have a chance to dig and where they stop they have their pay. Large companies cannot mine to advantage. Our company has divided up and are at Rio de los Cosamus where we are all doing well. Our average is about ten dollars per day for each man. Father and I are making much more per day. We are in the wet diggins. Old miners will not work here, they insist on going where they get thirty or forty per day. The winter and spring are the best for obtaining gold.

"I arrived in the gold mines three days ago . . . I left the teams 250 miles from here and rode through on horse back with Thomas Redford from White Pigeon. Left the Sturges well; they had got across the Great Desert that is so much dreaded. We came across in two nights, drove nights and laid up day times. The desert is forty-five miles long without grass or water, and deep sand. And for sixty miles back of it there is nothing for the cattle to eat. Calvin Johnson went ahead with John Klackner of Pigeon on horseback so that they could come back with water and meet us, for we had no way to carry enough to last us across. This is a desert of destruction . . . One team started with forty horses and five wagons and they only got seventeen horses across the desert. They left all of their wagons. Our wagon is the third one that has come clear across without being left on the desert and the cattle unhitched and driven to the river. I left the wagons at the river and after July 26 rode 250 miles in six days over the "Sera Nevada," about the worst road in the world.

"We have laid by five days for sickness. There is plenty of gold here. They dig from one to two ounces a day—worth $16 per ounce. . . . Provisions are worth their weight in gold. One man paid $625.00 for drawing one load of provisions thirty miles with three yoke of oxen. Wages are $10.00 to $15.00 per day; $100.00 for driving team. Board is $20.00 per week. If a man steals he is promptly shot or hung. Every man is allowed to dig and no man is to commence within ten feet of him".

In a later letter, Mr. Lown wrote: "Calvin and Cook and I have decided we can make more money by taking boarders. Calvin can make right good biscuit. We have built a good log house in the dry diggings. The Mottville company arrived last week. Haven't heard of the Centerville company since I left them in St. Joseph.

Our company has decided that one will cook, one tend grocery, one drive team, the other two dig gold. Digging gold is hard, discouraging work".

"Twenty two young men started two weeks ago from St. Joseph afoot with their provisions on their backs". Later David Benedict wrote: "California is great in minerals but for agriculture, I would not give old St. Joseph county for the whole state."

"About the St. Joseph County Mining Rangers? If I remember right, I wrote you that Jerome Macumber died of disease of the heart. He had had cholera and measles on the way. The St. Joseph County company dissolved partnership by mutual consent. From Bear Lake, Ludwig, Benedict, Vaughn and Cowles went to Oregon with Joseph Brown of Albion. B. F. Brown, L. Strong, Geo. Engle, J. Abbott, S. Gilkinson, L. W. Tubbs, D. H. Austin, J. Fisk, S. Jennings, G. Stone, J. C. Duree, H. A. Hecox, D. Gee and myself headed for the gold mines.

"G. W. Peacock went with J. C. Charles." The writer A. B. Montross tells of the difficulties along the way and the hard work of mining—advises his friends not to come.

CHAPTER XII

ST. JOSEPH "RINGS THE POTLE-BELL"

St. Joseph county has added little to criminology. True detective stories are scarce. Through the early years two or three murders, captured counterfeiters, and captured horse thieves summarizes the crime recorded. But in the seventies there was a robbery of more than county wide interest.

Among the many landmarks in the vicinity of Three Rivers which have an historical interest, the hillside on the property of Joseph DeMore, south of the intersection of US-131 with the Centerville road, M-7, played an important part in a true story of the early seventies. It is the site which was chosen by robbers for the burial of the county records stolen from the court house at Centerville in June 1872 and held three months for $25,000 reward.

An old newspaper account gives all the thrills of a modern detective story.

"Bold Robbery and Daring Outrage!
"Five Hundred Dollars Reward! ! !

"Stolen from the Register's office, Centerville, St. Joseph county, Michigan, 20 volumes of deeds, 20 volumes of mortgages and a thousand or more recorded papers and unrecorded deeds, etc., on the night of June 28, 1872. Five Hundred Dollars will be paid for the Restoration of the Property and the Apprehension of the Thief, or $2,500 for the Property. Elvah F. Pierce, Sheriff."

So ran the text of hand bills conspicuously posted along the highways and featured in the newspapers.

The News Reporter tells the following story in the July 6 issue:-

"One of the most daring robberies ever perpetrated in Michigan—one involving loss and confusion of land titles to a large amount of real estate, occured at Centreville last Friday night. A robbery which brings property owners to a realizing sense of the importance of adequate protection of records. It is not known what is the object of the theft unless it be for a large reward for their recovery. The record of deeds are volumes one to twenty-two and fifty-one. Mortgages—volumes one to ten, ten others taken in a haphazard way, army records, soldiers discharges, insurance policies, a thousand or more recorded papers.

"About five o'clock on Saturday morning of last week the discovery was made and the team which carried the records away was traced toward Three Rivers, across the St. Joseph river bridge, near the J. W. French Mfg. Co. mills,

into Fabius on the Cassopolis road and there the trace was lost.

"On Monday the supervisors held a meeting. They had received a tip that the team used was hired from a Centreville livery by a Three Rivers man for a stranger claiming residence in Chicago. The covered buggy in which the stranger came was exchanged with the Three Rivers man for a butcher's three spring wagon. The team was traced thus far by a peculiar shoe upon one of the horses hired at Centreville."

In the issues which follow there is an occasional warning about burglars, but the subject was crowded out of the newspapers by the "patent insides" and not until September do we find the conclusion of the story which centers on a shivery experience often related by the late Winn H. Hatch.

"Records Found"

"The discovery of the records by Officer Hatch of this place has suddenly closed the anxiety, if not the indignation of our people. We have no comment to make about the necessity of the cost to secure them or about what every man in the county would like at once and without parley.

"The manner in which the books were discovered by W. H. Hatch is a story to contemplate and coil the imagination around the hat band. A messenger at midnight on a dark night, a lantern moving away through the distance beyond Lockport; the journey following the guide up the railroad track to the Centreville crossing, then the turn off into Arnold's forest towards the river, Hatch with a revolver in hand preparing the suspicious looking pilot for quick and sudden death,—providing he was fooling. Then a sight of the books and counting those that the thieves had dug from the hillside. The dim lantern light, the wierd effect of voices from different parts of the wood—deep, hoarse undertones—and then the demand: 'Now we have shown you. Now you go about your part of the business.' After further parley with the guide again the voices: 'We have finished, go about your part of the business.' Mr. Hatch demanded: 'Will the books be safe! Will they be here when I return?' and the grim voice replied: 'Of course! This is straight. I agreed to turn up these books for $5,000 and expenses.' Hatch left quickly for town and the money and for the sheriff and for a team to take the records to Centreville.

"Prior to this, the supervisors had received a letter from Chicago offering to tell where the records were for $25,000.

"Sheriff Pierce, under direction of the supervisors finally negotiated the information for $5,000."

Evidently it was a kind of a Scottish settlement when each side, with fingers hooked, admonished the other: "Ring the potle-bell, gin ye brack the bargain an' ye'll gang to 'serious trouble.' "

The guide who conducted Mr. Hatch was sent by the Chicago firm. The books were found to be in a very bad condition. They had been thrown into a hole in the ground. The writing was blurred by moisture and many of the volumes were badly eaten by grubs. Two men were arrested as the thieves and one of them acquitted: the other, Richard Lane, was sent to Jackson for five years.

To the amount of the reward was added the expense of a lawsuit over the condition of the records. A suit that was lost by St. Joseph county. To this was added the additional expense of having the records recopied, which was done by L. A. DesVoignes of Mendon.

CHAPTER XIII

FLODDEN WATER

Though there has been comparatively little crime, St. Joseph county has by no means been destitute of thrills not the least of the disturbing agencies have been Ole Man River and the floods.

From a safe vantage point on the east shore of the St. Joseph river, an excited little darky bounced up and down like a rubber ball. He was watching the river-ice break up, and as the ice cakes ground and shot high on edge in air, the little darky gleefully shouted: "Dat ribah he suah am kickin' his covah's off!"

Since the time of the earliest inhabitant, the banks of the St. Joseph river have been lined with excited spectators "when the ice goes out." For an ice jam is thrilling even though staged by a mild-mannered river which long since, has been tamed by industry to do nothing other than make the wheels go round.

The conquest of St. Joseph, however, has been no easy task for at flood time, "Old man river, rollin' along, jes' rollin' along," has brought days of suspense and nights of anxiety to those along the shore who fought through long hours of strenuous labor to save dams and bridges and other property from the havoc wrought by rushing, rolling waters.

An observer of such a flood, W. H. Clute, editor, wrote a graphic description for the News Reporter of 1866.

Mr. Clute wrote in part:

"One of the most drenching rains commenced the middle of last week and continued steadily to fall upon the unprecedented body of snow which in a furious gale had fallen a few days before, rendering travel impossible.

"On Sunday the Rocky river, whose source is among the bluffs and knobs in the region of sawmills west of here, rushed madly down to its confluence with the St. Joseph river. To save the mills along the shores, several dams were allowed to be cut out by the ice floes and rushing water.

"All day Sunday the St. Joseph in a silent majesty, lay ice-bound as though it would never unbend to a popular excitement—but a busy scene was going on at the mouth of the Rocky. The stream 'took the railroad' and cut for itself a new bed, turning three rivers into four. Freight cars tilting at all angles were sunk three and four feet below the grade. Stumps, straw, stone, trees, and sand were used in making a dam to the high bank across the track. Without stopping to eat, the shovelers and teamsters worked without ceasing until the careening waters of the turbulent Rocky were turned back to their original course.

"Jack Frost was of use that anxious night. He fought on the side of man.

"Sunday evening the Portage, which rises in the level country north, began to exhibit signs of sympathy with the Rocky and the old St. Joseph gradually rose to meet it.

"The residents on Flint's Addition looked anxiously over the new grading. The broad bed of thick ice above the bridge, and the pond above, appeared to safely bind the waters, but water witches, who always haunt the sawmills, drew into the contest two thousand dollars worth of splendid logs, around which lay a boom of heavy poles and chains—the winter's harvest of Jackson and Whipple. These were added to the confusion, as with grinding and crashing they sought to come through a cut in the high bank at David bridge.

"For five days faithful men with pikes, axes, teams, boats, boys with lanterns, fought the ice, cut logs, felled trees. From the 'Red Bridge' to Lockport the water filled the wagon beds of passing travelers. Families of the new Flint Addition took lodging among their higher-minded neighbors, lest the boom break.

"On Wednesday Isaac Kimbal, returning home at night from church, started to cross the lower Lockport bridge. The darkness was blackness as he reached the middle span and just as he was about to step forward the dim light of his lantern revealed that the middle span had settled into the roily, roaring waters. Unlike St. Peter, it was Isaac's second thought that hastily saved him from going down.

"Excitement culminated Thursday as the great body of ice gave way above the dam. It left nothing standing in its wake, until it struck the old 'Red Bridge.' The bridge stood like a sturdy, pioneer soldier on guard. And when the boom of logs broke and with the ice floes, struck it broadside, the people on the sand bluff to the east of the bridge sent hastily for the printer and all his devils to come and see the old bridge go, but through all the roaring, whirling flood—it stood.

"Lockport is cut off by a flood a quarter of a mile in width; Brooklyn by a deep stream flowing over the approaches to the Brooklyn bridge; and Canada may be seen across the runaway Rocky, which still seems rebellious."

CHAPTER XIV

ST. JOSEPH IN KIRK-CLAES

The first religious society formed in the St. Joseph county territory was a Methodist class at Newville, in 1829; the second one was at White Pigeon village in 1830, with Capt. Alvin Calhoun as leader, Alanson Stewart, local preacher, and with Mr. and Mrs. John Bowers, Mr. and Mrs. John Coates and David Rollins as members. The first Presbyterian church was organized in 1830, the first edifice built in 1834, and from its belfry of modest proportions rang the first church bell installed in Southern Michigan west of Ann Arbor. The first trustees were Elijah White, N. B. Chapin, Dr. Loomis, Charles Kellogg, Lewis B. Judson and William Rowen.

Groups of the different denominations held their separate "meetings" and were organized several years before they were officially recorded at Centreville. The churches in the order in which they are recorded at the county clerk's office from 1830 to 1860 are: the Methodist Episcopal church in Centreville, 1835, with Benj. Sherman, Digby Bell (or Buel) and S. Truesdale as trustees; the First Reformed church of Centreville, April 8, 1839, with Phelps R. Toll, Isaac Ketcham, John Talbot, Jacob Kline and Solomon Cummings, trustees. In 1841 the First M. E. church of Mottville was recorded; in 1844 First Congregational Society of Three Rivers was recorded: "Met at the schoolhouse, Elders—John Seckler and E. S. Moore. Trustees: Eli Bristol, E. A. Egery, Wm. Woodruff, John Lomison."

Recorded 1844: First Baptist Church of Sherman; First Presbyterian Society of White Pigeon, organized by Charles McAllister and Edwin Kellogg.

Recorded 1845: First Baptist Church, Colon; M. E. Church Centreville, organized by John Ercanbrack.

Recorded 1846: First M. E. Church Three Rivers. "Jan. 10, 1846, by John Ercanbrack, preacher. Official Board: L. L. Frost, Warren D. Pettit, Wm. Arney, Zibie Ruggles.

Recorded 1856: M. E. Church, Sturgis.

Recorded 1852: First M. E. Church, Nottawa. Official Board: Phillip Hoffman, Wm. Hazzard, Comfort Tyler, Luther Goodrich and others.

Recorded 1863: Trinity Episcopal Church, Three Rivers. Organized by Voltaire Spaulding. Trustees: Wm. F. Wheeler, John Cowling, Edwin Murphy, Samuel Chadwick, Isaac Crosette, John M. Baily, S. A. Selleck, William Chart and Thomas Clark.

Presbyterian Church

The first Presbyterian Church of Three Rivers was organized August 12, 1838, by Rev. Mr. Stanley of Mottville, with nineteen members. James and Mrs. Slote, Mrs. Sarah Snyder, McDonald Campbell and his wife Jane; John Boudman, Catherine Mowrey, John and Mrs. Sickler, E. S. and Mary P. Moore, Mrs. Elizabeth Moore, Dr. E. S. Egery, John and Mrs. Troy, Mrs. Louisa Manning, Samuel Sterling, Miles and Mrs. Bristol.

The first meeting of the sessions was held at the home of Dr. Egery, March 4, 1839. In 1849 the first church edifice was dedicated by the Rev. O. P. Hoyt and Rev. Mr. Steele. The "new" church was dedicated May 11, 1870 by Rev. W. Hogarth and the greatly revered pastor, Rev. J. Ranney.

"In the days of our country's need, the Presbyterian Church proved its loyalty to the government as well as to God, and its patriotism was sealed by the sacrifice of its sons. Eighty of those identified with the church served in the Union Army—valiant and undaunted in the face of the foe, they endured untold hardships on the march, in prison and on the field. With their lives fourteen of the eighty attested their fidelity. No memorial can honor such sacrifice. The Church was honored in having noble sons to give to such a cause".

The Methodist Church

In 1829, Erastus Felton was appointed to St. Joseph mission, which included Cass, Berrien and St. Joseph counties.

In 1830 the Illinois conference appointed Rev. J. T. Robe to the Wayne Circuit as junior preacher with Rev. Joseph Tarkington as senior, and Rev. Allen Wiley as presiding officer. Rev. Robe was the first minister of any denomination to preach in Kalamazoo.

In 1832, the Indiana conference voted Kalamazoo in the Michigan conference, and combined the Wabash and St. Joseph valley missions and had Robinson, Beesweek and Boyd Phelps as preachers.

"Rev. T. J. Robe on horseback, and with traditional saddlebags, forded streams, some times swimming them on horseback, sometimes mired down nearly all over, following bridle-paths and Indian trails, exploring a wild territory with only here and there a sparsely settled territory, seeking to save souls, established preaching at the following places, viz: at Bronson (now Kalamazoo), Goodrich Prairie, Comstock, Tolen Prairie (now Galesburg), Grand and Genesse Prairies, Climax and Cobb's corners, Judge Harrison's corners on Prairie Ronde, Longwells on the south side of the prairie, Harris' Prairie (now Three Rivers), Little Prairie Ronde,

Decatur, Young's Prairie, Diamond Lake, Cassopolis, La-Grange and Pokagon Prairies, Albrights, Hunters (in the bend of the St. Joseph above Berrien) and at the mouth of the St. Joseph river, Beardsley Prairie, Edwardsburg and Indianfields, 25 in all, so arranged that each could be visited once in four weeks. He preached the first sermon in Bronson (now Kalamazoo) at the home of Titus Bronson, 1832-'33.

In 1833 Rev. T. J. Robe held a revival meeting at Judge Harrison's corners. Two members of this Methodist class refused to build a home for themselves other than their first little cabin until a church was built. This church was the first one north of the St. Joseph.

In 1838 the Michigan district was formed with Rev. John Erkenbrack presiding elder.

Methodist Church, Three Rivers

Rev. Ezra Cole, a Methodist preacher in the early church came to Michigan in 1839. He found a membership of eleven Methodists in the little settlement of Three Rivers, and identifying himself at once with them, became their preacher. He was born in Benton Center, Yates County, N. Y., November 17, 1779. His boyhood was spent in scenes and among the soldiers of the American Revolution and his whole life was colored by the valor, sacrifice and self denial of that strenous period.

The older members of the Methodist Episcopal church tell of the conversion of Rev. Cole and of his services as a boy preacher in New York. In 1839 the travel-worn itinerant preacher made the most irregular visits to his people, at best not more than once in two weeks, and so Rev. Cole supplied when the circuit rider failed to come. "Strong men taught Rev. Cole the gospel, heroic men taught him to preach. He spoke to a plain devoted people. The zeal of the early Methodists was warm and enthusiastic, they abounded in labor and sacrifice."

In an article written for the Tribune of 1884, by J. H. Pitzel, there are given the names of the original Methodist Class in Three Rivers. It included the names of Mr. and Mrs. John Arney, Charles G. Carpenter, Joseph Sterling, leader; Esther Sterling, John Carpenter and wife, Mrs. Grant Brown, Lydia Snyder, Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Wescott, Simeon L. Frost, Emeline Arney, Wm. Ryder and wife, Rev. and Mrs. Ezra Cole, "Brother" Hoffman and Catherine Hoffman.

Of these early Methodist who gave a virile personality to the little settlement at Three Rivers, Rev. Pitzel pays special tribute to Rev. Ezra Cole and the Arneys. Rev. Pitzel, who was himself a Methodist minister and missionary,

is accredited to St. Joseph county as one of our earliest writers of note. Two volumes, one of poetry—"Stray Leaves" and the other, an autobiography, which gives his experiences as a missionary to the Indians in Northern Michigan, are best known. He contributed many poems to the local papers. His style is shown by one published in the Three Rivers Tribune in 1887: "A Dream of the Rolling Years." It is a life sketch of Wm. Arney. It begins with Arney's "Bye-O-Baby-Bunting days" and closes with the birthday toast:

"On this high day of three score, ten and five,
Our warm congratulation we extend.
God willing, may added years be yours.
May mercies manifold attend.
May your evening sun now in a golden west
Rise through cloudless skies to a new day
Of joy and peace and rest."

(The following reminiscences, written by Miss Annette Cowling, were read before the Abiel Fellows chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, November 15, 1930.)

Methodist Silhouettes

"We do not aim to canonize the worthy people of our local churches, nor do we purpose to speak lightly of their homely ways, or the times in which they lived, but we desire to express an appreciation of lives whose motives flowered into such fineness of purpose that today our churches stand as a fitting monument to their work. Of those beyond our memory's ken, we speak only from hearsay. Such ones were the Hoffmans, the Browns, the Carpenters, Sands, Wescotts, Ryders, Snyders, and the Coles—not forgetting the unique character of old Father Penfield. This good man was active, zealous, faithful, but nervous withal and irritable under repeated interruptions of the firstly's, secondly's and thirdly's of his sermons, especially during cold epidemics. In those days people were not troubled by the fear of germs, so Father Penfield preached and suffered. When unable to endure the frequent paroxysms of coughing any longer, he was wont to stop preaching and say: "Cough, cough again!" or, "Stop coughing or I'll have to stop preaching." This dire threat, however, never was carried out.

Of the pastor, Ezra Cole, a picture memory is framed in a deep set-in porch, "Pap' in his arm chair refilling his pipe. Minus coat, blue suspenders showing over a snow white shirt, feet thrust into carpet slippers, he looked the picture of content. Out from the house door came his wife bearing a lighted splinter. Taking the pipe, she applied the flame, gave two or three puffs, placed it again in his hand and withdrew

leaving him placidly wreathing himself in an ever increasing cloud of smoke. A picture worthy of the old Dutch masters.

A pillar of power in those early days was the Rev. John Pitzel, a frail, slight, dignified man, fervent in spirit and active in service, suffering no idle talk to find place in his conversation. His daughter Carrie, for years the church organist, served God faithfully with deft fingers, even as the leader of the choir, Frank Saxton, served with his voice. At that time my parents were members of the choir, and while they sang, their small daughter Eoline sat in the front pew looking with adoring eyes upon her beloved father and the little blue eyed mother, her heart swelling with pride when tones distinctively their own reached her ears.

Speaking of choirs, it was about this time that Sarah Westlake, (the late Mrs. Lewis Thoms), became a member of the choir. Sarah decided to buy a new ribbon to knot at her throat. The milliner displayed a new style and color, assuring her that it had taken well among the women of the town. The ribbon was bought, and on Sunday when Sarah entered the choir, behold! every woman member thereof sat primly displaying a ribbon exactly matching her own.

And now let us turn back the wheel of life to a spot within recall of my own memory, and look upon some of the good people as they assembled for worship in our present house of God. We look with interest at the first one who comes walking down the aisle. She comes to mind with cameo like distinctness. Immaculate in appearance, well poised, serene of countenance, Aunty Bacon seemed the personfication of all good. In summer dressed always in white: white silk dress, white silk shawl, white silk bonnet; in winter dressed all in brown, never varied, always the same; patterned in the same fashion and the color according to season.

Next comes Aunt Sophie Salsig, a wee mouse of a woman, timidly finding her way to the center front where, with head bent in humility, she worshiped unobtrusively.

The Creveling family enter on the north side and take their places in the center tier of seats well toward the front. They were dependable, coming from the country through the summer storms or winter drifts, a demonstrable example of faithfulness. And beside them, separated only by the division of seats, are the Ruggles families—two of them—Catlin and Ziba, hard workers in the church. Mrs. Catlin Ruggles is always associated in my mind's eye with a wonderful broche shawl thrown around a pair of substantial shoulders, well fitted to carry the burdens of life capably and with tried endurance. Mrs. Ziba Ruggles and her sister, Mrs. "Dr." Choate, were inseparable in my mind as church workers. They

were true daughters of their beloved father Ezra Cole, and as untiring in service. Always in evidence at all church functions and trusted advisors in church activities, social and otherwise, they might be styled "church mothers." Mrs. Choate's jumbles were prime favorites at the not infrequent socials, while no one could outdo Mrs. Ruggles in making coffee of delicious flavor.

Sitting behind these good people is quaint little Mrs. Wood. There were plenty of pillars in the church, but for strength in chinking, this little woman is foremost in the rank. Of like quality, also, is Auntie May; while for reserve strength and upright living there were none more influential than Eunice Cowgill. Nor must we forget Mrs. Sally Hiles who worked with her needle early and late for the building of her beloved church. To her often fell the duty of publicly asking God's blessing. Calmly, and with wonderful poise and sincereity of manner she conversed with the Lord, making of Him a veritable presence.

An example of humble saintliness and fearlessness in denunciation of wrong was found in the person of Grandmother Graybill, coming in now on the south side of the church leaning heavily on her cane. Once when an evangelist had made very decided accusations against the so-called evils of card playing and dancing, the dear saintly old lady rose to her feet and quaveringly announced: "I don't want to be found a dancing my way to heaven, a carrin'on with cards and sech. I just long to be good".

The dignified, business like Jacob Slenker and family now find their accustomed seating in the center of the church, followed closely by the Waltons, the Throps and John Cox. I can still remember my feeling of awe as these people appeared, for were they not able to keep the church running smoothly in a financial way with their—to my mind—stupendous wealth? Did not Mr. Walton give enough church hymnals to supply every pew with one or more? To my immature mind, Mr. S. A. Walton must be the possessor of Aladdin's lamp, which to rub only and to wish, would bring every thing desirable. And what more desirable than to be able to furnish songs of praise for the Lord's house.

No less wonderful to me were the pledges bestowed upon the church by John Throp and family, and John Cox. Church debts—will they ever be wiped off the slate?—were a fruitful vintage then, as now, and pledges were almost as much a part of church activities as the quarterly meeting or the yearly conferences. When, after a long time, and to restless childhood, a tedious season of begging, a goodly sum still remained unpledged, it would come to an end with this announcement:

"Mr. John Cox promises to become responsible for the balance". Or this: "If ten persons will give five dollars, Mr. Cox will give an equal amount". And when, on the death of Mr. Cox, it was found he had left $1,000.00 to yield annual interest for its needs, my respect for the coffers of the rich was considerably heightened.

Mr. Throp was a sort of silent partner in church affairs; quiet but influential. The old time tribute to Sir Philip Sydney may be fittingly applied to Mrs. Throp:-

"A sweet, attractive kind of grace,
A swift assurance given by looks,
Continual comfort in a face
The lineaments of gospel books".

A fine type of protective guardianship of Methodism now approaches—Arthur Silliman, his wife, son Frank and diminutive daughter. Refined in bearing, unostentatious in manner—commanding respect. Of Mr. Silliman's relationship to the church we quote his own humorous explanation to a stranger when asked if he was Brother Silliman. "As a matter of fact, Sir, I may be more properly addressed as brother-in-law,—a brother-in-law to the church."

"Listen! A modest little sneeze attracts our attention. It comes from the Arnold pew. At some time or other during the service, this smothered sneeze never failed to punctuate the firstly, secondly or thirdly of the oftimes long drawn out sermon. As soon would I part with my choicest memories of childhood as fail to recall that little stir in the otherwise quiet service, or the almost imperceptible nod or shake of the jet bonnet as the owner agreed with the preacher's viewpoint pro or con. Kindly, charitable, Mrs. Otis Arnold always represented to my child mind a picture of a Mother in Israel.

"Look now, at the rugged charm and simplicity of the next couple who enter the church. I can never forget the tall gaunt figure of Joseph Sterling, or his near-sighted little wife without recalling an impression of the strong and weak; of protection and reliance. Here they come, he, strong, muscular, with an abundance of wiry gray hair, she with air of timid apology for her presence. They stand very close together during the singing of the hymns, Mrs. Sterling holding her book in close proximity to her eyes, while Mr. Sterling towers head and shoulders above her, eyes lit with a holy fervor, timing the lines of the song mechanically, his book held high as he turned his eyes upward, and down as they sought the printed page. With every upward glance assertive chin whiskers rose up in unison, and joy unspeakable flooded his countenance, till I, watching in the simple faith of childhood, wondered if the angels looking over the battle-

ments of heaven did not shout hallelujahs from very joy of this saintly man.

"But now comes quick, staccato-like steps, pit-pat, pit-pat down the aisle, and one knows without turning the head what worshiper nears. Down to the entrance of the pew we hear her come, then pause—now a light side-stepping to the extreme end of the seat, and we know Mrs. George Graham is in her place.

"Across on the north side of the church, the much respected colored man—Bird L. Weaver—appears, a true replica in looks, manner and life of the storied Uncle Tom. Gone now to his last grand adventure, as has the wonderful, homely old soul, Dr. Kroh, the once well known herb doctor and healer of ills, spiritual as well as physical.

"Some one has said, 'Fretting is like a rocking chair. You can do a great deal of agitating in it without getting anywhere.' Such a one was the ever present Mr. Newman, seated in a front pew, shaken always by a frenzy of religious fervor, prais-God in tremulous tones, rising in his excitement, shouting 'Amen'!—always being extremely thankful that 'Religion is free.'

"Father Arney, one of the early workers, a just, and a highly spiritual one, while taking up the offering, left the impression of gathering tithes for the storehouse, so impressively did he perform the office. And his wife left in my mind a phrase, oft repeated in her prayers: 'Snatched as a brand from the burning,' giving me a wholesome fear of wrongdoing.

"Ziba Ruggles comes in late, and as he makes his way to his place beside his wife, I am reminded of his fervent petitions in prayer meeting, prayers which, beginning in low, even tones, grew in ascendency in volume as his intensity of feeling increased, until with one last heartfelt appeal, his voice suddenly subsided to an almost indistinct 'Amen', and then silence.

"Now the church is rapidly filling, but while there is still a moment's time, there comes others belonging to the church's galaxy of notables in the persons no less faithful than the ones previously mentioned. The qualities of gentleness, goodness, meekness, and faithfulness can be summed up in the characters of the Cushmans, Armitages, Cooks, Klines, Perrins, Holtoms, McMurtries, Pealers, Brokaws, Freeses and the Thoms. Uncle Jimmie Thoms seemed a blessed link of perpetual peace in the sometimes anxious hours of momentous happenings. Then, linking the past with the more recent labors in church life, there comes at this time Dr. and Mrs. L. O. Miller with years of service, Mrs. Miller in Sunday school among her girls and Dr. Miller in the church choir where he proved himself a

competent leader of song. Those two hold a large place in the continuance of the church's welfare, begun so long ago.

"The seats are filled. Still one more comes in to fill his accustomed place—Nathan Snyder—our patriarch, and one well versed in the book of Revelations. Often have I listened to his pronouncements concerning the angel with the seven vials of wrath, and he never failed to awe me into non-commital respect for the glassy seas and paved streets of paradise. Here, too, was one associated with the tithes for the Master's use. For from earliest remembrance, and for many years afterwards, this familiar figure was seen counting the Sunday school offerings, after having gathered them up from each class in his hat."

The interesting paper closes with the hush which precedes the service, as Miss Cowling visualizes again the two worshipers who encompassed her world, her father, John Cowling, of English birth and inherited French traits; and her mother of English and Yankee ancestry, to whom Miss Cowling pays loving tribute as "bulwarks in the path of Christian living".

The Harmonical Society

In 1858, the Harmonical Society of Sturgis built a Free Church, which was dedicated to religious liberty, where each individual could worship as he chose. A grey granite monument now stands at the intersection of U. S. 112 at Madison Street, Sturgis. On it is a bronze tablet with the inscription:

> "The Harmonical Society of Sturgis
> built on this site a free church
> dedicated to religious liberty,
> The first of it's kind in the world.
> To perpetuate the memory of its
> founders, this ground is granted
> to the City of Sturgis, to be forever
> maintained as 'The Free Church Park.'
> In accordance with agreement
> filed with county register of deeds.
>
> Founders:
>
> Jonathan G. Wait — Balsar B. Gardner
> Harrison Kelly — John B. Jacobs
> James Johnson — Nathaniel E. Hutchinson
> Benjamin G. Buck — Wm. H. Osborn
>
> Granted in year 1920 by trustees;
>
> Frank W. Wait, Pres. — Joe D. Sturgis
> Frank Gilhams — Harrison W. Kelly
> Arthur H. Wait — Bert H. Parker".

CHAPTER XV

BOOK-LEAR

The Public Library

In her first Constitution Michigan made provision for libraries in 1835. The clause runs as follows: "As soon as circumstances of the State will permit the Legislature shall provide for the establishment of libraries, one in each township, and the money . . . paid by persons as equivalent for exemption from military duty, and . . . fines . . . for breach of penal laws shall be exclusively applied to support of said libraries. (Art. 10, Sect. 4, Law of 1835).

In "Libraries in Michigan "Miss G. M. Walton says in part: "Too little study and appreciation has been given to the beginning of our town and city libraries.

"The Ladies Library Associations, in good old Victorian phrase, were very often the outgrowth of Reading Circles gathered in some small private library, for rich indeed was the library in those early days that outgrew the simple bookcase of cherry or mahogany with its glass doors, lovingly carried with other household goods from the old home in the East. We must remember that most of our settlers brought some books with them. Books were still very individual and the evolution of the public library was undreamed of".

"Literary societies were generally the vital factors in the formation of the subscription or association libraries".

St. Joseph county had Ladies Library Associations in almost every village. Old newspapers announce their programs: Colon, Centreville, Sturgis, White Pigeon, Constantine, Three Rivers.

The following article appeared in the Daily Commercial and is condensed from the history of the Three Rivers public library, written by city librarian, Sue I. Silliman, for the Jubilee History of the American Libraries published by the A. L. A. in honor of its fiftieth year. It was read by Miss Silliman at the nintieth birthday celebration of Three Rivers library, held at the library by the Daughters of the American Revolution, Oct. 15, 1927."

"The resolutions adopted by the first school board of Three Rivers, now first ward, prove that our municipal grandfathers had foresight as well as courage; and an appreciation of literature as well as of the essential three R's, for on that eventful fifteenth day of October, 1837, the school board voted 'One hundred dollars with which to build a school house and five dollars with which to buy a library, the same to have a suitable case and John H. Bowman to be librarian."

There is scant historical data concerning the development of the library during the early years. Only an occasional newspaper item heralding the purchase of a book or the activities of school library or "Zetalethian society" in behalf of the library fund.

In 1850, when Michigan's new constitution guaranteed the township library with half mill tax for its support, Lockport township promptly availed itself of the opportunity and established the Lockport township library, its habitat the office of the township clerk and a long line of the old township clerks respond to the roll call of librarian. An interesting sidelight on the old township library is shown by a Clute editorial, wherein the doughty editor states that "the township books are so hedged around with rules that only the town clerks have time to borrow them or opportunity to read them".

If it is true that events of history are only the lengthened shadow of one man, then the Three Rivers library has been fortunate in dominating personalities during the ninety years of growth; the old school board with its John H. Bowman, librarian,—the man who platted Three Rivers and Colon, first state representative from Three Rivers; Rev. Ogden of the early Presbyterian church; and in the limelight of the sixties, William H. Paine, first superintendent of Three Rivers schools, later to become nationally famous in the chair of pedagogy at the U. of M. Mr. Paine so imbued the little village with a desire for educational advancement that down through the years there has come a profound respect for his work and judgment. An open letter to Three Rivers, written at Adrian in 1878, and published by the editor of the Three Rivers Tribune, G. A. B. Cooke, without a doubt, had much to do with shaping sentiment and library history in Three Rivers.

Mr. Paine wrote:-

"I am heartily glad, Mr. Cooke, that your people are thinking of founding a public library and I wish I might be of service in the matter. I do not know what better fortune I might wish the citizens of my old home town than a growing collection of good books whereby the means of library culture may be within the reach of the coming generations.

"Your public schools have done their best work when they have fostered a desire to know— have stimulated a mental activity and have created a quenchless thirst for knowledge. The public library is the natural and necessary complement of the public school.

"In an enterprise of this kind, the thing of first importance is a rational beginning— such a beginning as shall insure normal and continuous growth. A good library is not the work of one generation, but many; the effort today should

be to lay the foundation broad and secure upon which the coming generations may safely build. The elements of a good foundation I believe to be these:

(1) A secure and accessible location.

(2) An unfailing library fund devoted to its specific purpose.

(3) Intelligent and so far as possible, permanent management, both in purchase of books and their care and distribution.

"Under the first head I would recommend a fireproof building, centrally located and used exclusively for the library. Under the second heading, books should be bought on a rational well defined plan. A library should have a symmetrical almost organic growth.

"Certain classes of books should have preference and only the best in their respective classes bought. Special training and exceptional fitness is required for this purpose. For these reasons a library should have a head (in two senses of the word) and this headship should be vested in a librarian and the position made as permanent as possible."

Another letter, also used to formulate public opinion was written by I. W. Stone, formerly principal of Three Rivers schools, but in 1878 in the schools of Battle Creek. Supt. Stone advocates the same principles that were stated by Supt. Paine but places emphasis on having a thoroughly competent librarian. Insisting that "the quality of the librarian is of chief importance whether the library be large or small. He should have a wide knowledge of books, quick apprehension of the character of those whom he serves and sound judgment. No better investment could be made by any city than the establishment of a library. The day is coming when the public library will be considered as indispensible as the public school".

A township library report for 1878 shows 500 volumes and a circulation of 1,346 with the library open only on Saturdays.

During the years that followed there were spasmodic efforts by press, pulpit and literary societies to establish a public library but nothing definite was accomplished until in 1885 when a new voice was heard, Superintendent Walter H. Cheever, the gentle, cultured, lover of good books, who intensified public interest in library conditions. Associated with him was Hon. E. B. Linsley, a man of vision, action, great administrative ability and it was he who fathered the petition for a tax levy of one-half mill on the dollar for the support of a public library. The old petition is a roll call of the business

men of the eighties. The measure was carried by a majority of 514.

The first library board of directors consisted of president, Walter H. Cheever, G. A. B. Cooke, B. E. Andrews, R. R. Pealer, Dr. D. J. Nichols and E. B. Linsley and on July 3rd, 1889 Mrs. Lucy Fellows Andrews (Mrs. B. E.) was chosen librarian and the library opened July 17, 1889, in the "White Ribbon" rooms—now the second floor of the Knights of Pythias block.

During the sixties a reading room had been opened in the photo display room of the Udell gallery, now the Scidmore block, but it was not until Jan. 1890 in response to a petition, that the library board opened the library rooms for reading. In 1895 the library was organized and reclassified by Miss Alice Tyler, assisted by Mrs. Fanny Green and Miss Sue I. Silliman. The librarian was Miss Bertha Swartwout.

In 1897 Lockport township sold its interest to the city of Three Rivers and the first directors under city control were: President, E. B. Linsley, Secretary, M. J. Huss, Vice President, B. E. Andrews, and H. D. Cushman as the fourth director.

Mr. Linsley made the library his special interest and continued as president until his death in 1914. As senator from this district, 1904-1908, he was enabled to assist the library situation in Michigan. In a letter written in 1910, Mr. Linsley tells of the incorporation of the village of Three Rivers, as a city and of the incorporation of the Act of 1882 in regard to library interests, of the change in the law to four members as being more effective and to a tax rate of one and one fourth mills. The legislature of 1905 made libraries comparatively independent of municipal bodies in order to protect them from political strife.

January 5th, 1905 the new library building (built by H. V. Snyder and Son, and A. W. Rush and Co., architects) was opened. The 8,000 volumes of that day have become 23,000. The old school library now housed in the new junior high building was voluntarily reclassified by the librarian of the public library. She was given an honorary title of supervisor. Her duties included purchase and classification of the school library books, instruction to the school pupils in the use of the reference helps and training of honor students in elementary library work to act as student librarians.

In 1927, Miss Esther Avery was appointed the first regular librarian. She, also, taught one class period.

The following year, Mrs. Robert Howell, circulation assistant for four years at the public library, became the first full-time school librarian for the Three Rivers schools.

Schools

The framers of Michigan's first Constitution provided for an ample school system; one embracing a plan for a primary school, an academy and a university. The academy was called a "branch" of the university. Superintendent Pierce in his first report to the legislature asked for a system of branches in each county, provided the supervisors procure a suitable site and erect the buildings. Six men were to constitute a board of trustees, with the judge of probate, two associate judges and county clerk as ex officio members. The trustees superintended the general concerns appointed teachers, etc. The other members were to be appointed by the supervisors.

In each "branch" there were three departments—one for the education of teachers, one for the highest English education, and one for classical instruction. Each branch was to have a 'female' department under appropriate instructors. Of the eight "branches" St. Joseph county had one at White Pigeon. It was established in 1839 with Rev. Samuel Newbury as principal. Most of the principals were clergymen who added an ethical value to their instructions. The old branch building was a very plain building and had very little school apparatus. However, it was the old "branches" for which Gov. John S. Barry pleaded. He believed them essential because they gave teachers an education which was especially helpful for their work in the schools of Michigan. Education was a theme of general interest and the public school system evolved slowly, carefully.

Judge R. R. Pealer for many years a member of the Three Rivers School Board, tells the story of the early schools of Three Rivers in an address given at an alumni banquet sometime in the "eighties".

"As the years rolled around people settled between the Rocky and the Portage. An enterprising young man, John H. Bowman of Columbia County, Pennsylvania, came, entered and platted the land near where we now are. He built the first of the Emery mills and put in motion such forces as caused the business part of the village to be permanently located on this side. (First ward). He secured a reorganization of the school districts.

"Our respected citizen, Dr. Choate, was then a rising young physician and honored with the office of school inspector and in '39 he organized the present school district. Soon after this the school was moved from the west side to this. A new, rough, frame building of one room was built on Portage Avenue on what is now an open field in front of the residence of Mr. John Hoffman, (later the site of the

Frank Beatty residence.) This was used from 1840 to 1845, when it was determined that the school house was too far out and that it should be moved into town. The people turned out and hitched 15 yoke of oxen to it and drew it down on the Public Square on the west side of Main street. It is said that the building was considerably racked and that one ox had his leg broken, and it is remembered by those of that day, as an exciting time.

"This school house was used by the young Prutzmans, Moores, Beadles, Hoffmans, Bucks and Bowmans and stood on that ground for about five years, when it was replaced by the first brick school building of the town, the one which has recently been torn down. This brick building was erected on the east side of the Public Square where the addition is now being built.

"Those who wish to see the first school building of this ward can find it in the residence of Mr. Zach. Jacobs. It is a part of his house.

"The brick school house was the first to contain more than one room, it having two. In '59 the present High School, containing six additional rooms was erected. In '73 the 3rd Ward school was opened in the basement of the Reformed Church and in '83 the 3rd Ward building was put up. In '82 the 4th Ward school was opened and in '84 the present ward school house was built and now we are enlarging the Central school building.

"Thus we note the development as to buildings. We must leave the rude benches and desks in the old log school house and the frame building to the imagination. The improved combination seat and desk came and these gave way to the patent seat and desk of modern times.

"As to the teachers, I find that John Arney, father of our worthy townsman, William Arney, taught the first school on the west side. He had but one arm and punished mischievous boys by holding their heads between his knees and dealing out the penalty with his single hand, and it is within the recollection of some, that on one occasion Father Arney was bitten by a boy thus held. Time will not permit me to trace the development in methods of punishment from Arney to Cheever.

"A Mr. Loomis, also, taught on the west side. John Ogden taught for a number of terms in the school house near Hoffmans' and a lady whose name is given as Hillsdill is said to have been a successful teacher and to have retained the school for a number of terms.

"There is no record as to all these matters. I have to rely on the recollection of those who lived here in those years.

"Among others who taught in the frame building on the west side of the Public Square was Mr. Isaac Crossette. He was long honorably connected with the school as a teacher and officer and I doubt not, had much to do with the foundation of the Union School. He came a young man in '49 and was examined by Dr. Choate who was the school inspector and Father Arney was clerk. Crossette passed and took charge of the school and continued until the spring of '52. He taught the whole school for $22.00 a month and boarded himself. There were 120 names on the roll and no assistant teacher.

A copy of a quaint old school magazine, issued in the late "fifties," was loaned to the compiler of the "Centennial Souvenir", by Mrs. Katherine (Kline) Sine, daughter of Annin and Mary Ann (McKie) Kline, pioneers.

On the cover is a pencil drawing of a Doric temple. Between the columns in large print is the title of the publication, "The Evening Star", "Devoted to Literature and Fun". The motto: "In Toto", and the editors names: Miss Mary Ann McKie and Miss Elizabeth Fry. The 14 double column pages carry essays and stories: Friendship, Beauties of Nature, Snow, Compositions, City Life, beside imaginary travels and biographies.

The following is one of the anonymous biographies: "I was born in the year 1836, After the age of four I was obliged to work,—nothing but pick up chips and bring in wood from morning till night. Then I began to go to school—nothing else for two years, after that I went to school winters and worked summers.

"In 1867 I moved to the northern part of the county and in 1868 moved back to the beautiful village of Centreville where we now live. Many are the lonesome hours I have spent in this lovely village. My residence is No. 5, Market street. By trade I am now a Mason".

Signed "One of the Hytanlefallonamity".

Miss Ruth Hoppin, Educator

To picture the events in the life of Miss Ruth Hoppin, one of Michigan's ablest educators, is to follow, for more than fifty years, the evolution of education in Michigan, which began with the meagerly equipped pioneer schools of the thirties and followed through the development of the village schools, the state normal, the college and the university. A new spirit of education permeated the State through the powerful influence of great personalities who dominated Michigan's early educational system.

From Oberlin's record of Miss Hoppin we quote the following: "Miss Ruth Hoppin was the daughter of Samuel and Rebecca Hoppin, born in Chautaqua County, New York, December 17, 1833. In 1836 with her father's family she came to Michigan, locating in Kalamazoo County, at Prairie Ronde, in a year or so moving to Park township, St. Joseph County. At the age of fifteen she accompanied a relative back to New York for better educational advantages, and in 1849 she came to Oberlin where she studied, going out to teach during vacations and so earning money to continue her course. She was graduated in 1856. The following year she taught in a young ladies' seminary in Jerseyville, Illinois, and in 1858 became preceptress of the high school at Three Rivers, Michigan. Later she was for three years a teacher at Ann Arbor high school and from 1867 to 1881 she was preceptress at the Michigan State Normal School at Ypsilanti. She was then called by Smith College to the chair of Botany and Biology, where she taught until given leave of absence on account of ill health (1881-1884). She spent several years in Missouri and Texas, part of the time as collector for the Harvard Museum. Later she traveled in Europe and on the Continent. In 1890 Miss Hoppin returned to the University of Michigan where she was given the degree of A. M. on examination in 1891. She taught literature at the University of North Dakota, but because of ill health she was forced to give up this work, whereupon she returned to Three Rivers and took private classes in history and literature. Besides being an active worker in the Presbyterian Church, she did a most valuable work for the Woman's clubs of southwestern Michigan".

Miss Hoppin began her life as a teacher in the little country school of Park township and many are the tales still told of her ability as a teacher and disciplinarian. An old "rate bill" in the Stoufer-Silliman collection gives a glimpse of the financial resources of the tiny country school in Park, when in 1849 the children of twelve families were taught through the summer term, and the teacher, besides her "experience", received a total of six dollars and seventy-five cents for the entire term. The old rate bill indirectly reveals something of Miss Hoppin's frugality, something of her splendid courage, when we note the Oberlin record that "by teaching during vacation she earned her own way through college". She was graduated from Oberlin in a "print" dress of her own making.

After she was graduated from Oberlin and had taught a year in an Illinois seminary, Miss Hoppin became preceptress of the Three Rivers Union Schools of which William H.

Paine was principal, — the same Professor Paine who later organized and first filled the chair of "The Science and the Art of Teaching" at the University of Michigan. In a recent letter, Miss G. M. Walton, librarian of the Michigan State Normal College writes: "May I suggest that Miss Hoppin's close acquaintance and work with William H. Paine, who was one of our great American educators, must have given her a feeling for our great educational problems which few women of her time—or even later—possessed".

In "Some Souvenirs of My Professional Life" by Professor Paine, there is a delightful description of a typical village school of the period and also of a teachers' institute, which at that time was being first used effectively in Michigan by the state superintendent of public instruction, John M. Gregory. Mr. Paine writes: "In the early summer of 1858 I was elected principal of the Three Rivers school, with my wife as my assistant, at a joint salary of seven hundred dollars. We trundled our way into the pleasant village by the stage coach from Kalamazoo. As we entered the town, the most conspicuous sight was a narrow two-story brick building which we easily guessed to be the scene of our professional labors, and from the array of tubs, buckets, mops and brooms in front of the house, we drew the further inference that the beginning of our labors was near at hand.

"Every life has its golden age. The period of which I write was mine. It was the beginning of my professional career. In the State at large a new spirit was abroad. The university was calling young men to the higher intellectual life. By a process of gradual descent the lower schools caught the wholesome infection, and there followed the transformation of private schools and academies into public schools of the high school or secondary type. The public school system was in process of formation, a living organism with brain, central ganglia and minute nerve cells". Of the development of the little school of two departments, Professor Paine further says, "It gave me one of the opportunities of my life, that of learning by actual need and experience the art of grading a public school."

To awaken a local interest in education Mr. Paine invited John M. Gregory, then recently elected State superintendent of public instruction to conduct a teacher's institute at Three Rivers. With Mr. Gregory came Professors Olney, of Kalamazoo, and Sill and Welch of Ypsilanti. Delightfully humorous is Mr. Paine's description of the three hours ride from White Pigeon as he and his guests drove along the deeply rutted road where at intervals great forest trees had fallen, and most delightful his characterizations and tributes to the

early educators. Of the institute work, in which Miss Hoppin had a prominent part, Professor Paine summarizes: "Better than all is the communication of a new spirit that creates a noble passion for better things in what may be called intellectual conversion. The best effects of the institute is left on the people by creating an atmosphere favorable to the creation of a good school".

A discussion of education for the young people of St. Joseph county which failed to mention the "female seminaries" would be most incomplete. Among those most patronized by the young women of the county were the Presbyterian Female Seminary at Kalamazoo, The Oaks Seminary (co-educational) at Schoolcraft: the Monroe Seminary, one at Colon and a few years later the Seminary for Young Ladies kept by the Misses Clute.

There was a tuition fee, usually, of one dollar; the regular elementary or secondary studies were from one to three dollars per semester,—Painting, "artistic motion" and calisthenics extra.

In 1859 a reaction had begun, the weeping invalid in the hands of a very small percentage of strong-minded females was taking up calisthenics with "dumb-bells". Smart's Manual went to unheard of lengths in the matter of pure air. Possibly the tightly closed windows and doors were the reason for the authors directions in the breathing exercises: "Inhale slowly and exhale four times".

"Adapted to the rythm of the music and the motion of the dumb-bells' the following golden thoughts were given to strengthen the moral fiber:

"I will try."
"Aim, aim, high, high".
"I can if I will".
"Dare to do right".
"Labor conquers all things."
"He liveth long who liveth well"
"If we would excell; we must labor,"
"Learning is better than silver or gold".
"Speak the truth; act the truth; think the truth".
Excelsior—higher and higher, but only step by step".
"The end
crowns
the
work."

The little old manual includes directions for school work with 30 numbered gestures which are to be given to the words

of "Hail Columbia" and from the numbering it must have given the pupils a very lively hour.

"Hail, Columbia, happy land!
1 1 2 3
Hail ye heroes! heaven-born band; etc.
2 3 4 5 6

The direction for the proper dress was furnished by Madam Demorest, of New York City. It comprised a Garibaldi waist, short skirt and trowsers. "The material to be very warm. A flannel lining added to preserve from sudden chills. Underneath wool knit drawers. Sleeves must close at wrist. The trowsers drawn in at the ankles with an elastic band. Trimmings should be waved or festooned; buttoned boots are best".

The following is quoted from "The Western Chronicle" concerning a Calisthenics club of 1859:

"The Ladies' Calisthenic club elected the following officers: President, Mrs. Hutchinson; Vice president, Mrs. W. H. Paine; Secretary, Mrs. L. B. Ritch; Treasurer, Mrs. Thomas Silliman.

The editor endorsed the work of the club with the following editorial:

"We may hope for something better in the fashionable world if the absurd fashion of being delicate, feeble and sickly, in order to be in fashion, is discarded and such institutions as ladies' calisthenics clubs and the parlour use of dumb-bells be inaugurated and a knowledge of their value thoroughly scattered through the land".

PART IV CHAPTER XVI

ST JOSEPH'S HONOR ROLL—PEACE

Peace has its victories and St. Joseph County's Honor Roll of Peace rightfully includes the names of the members of the Michigan State Senate and House of Representatives elected from St. Joseph County, 1836-1930.

Among the Congressmen from Michigan, St. Joseph County has given John S. Chipman, Charles Upson, E. W. Keightly and George L. Yaple,

Senators

Of the members of the State Legislature, St. Joseph County has been the home of the following state senators: John S. Barry (Constantine) 1835-'8 and 1841. He was the first president pro tem of the senate; Frank S. Cummings (Centreville) 1925; Orlando J. Fast (Mendon) 1883; J. Mark Harvey (Constantine) 1919; E. B. Linsley (Three Rivers) 1905, 1907; E. S. Moore (Three Rivers) 1853; E. W. Pendleton (Sturgis) 1897; A. C. Prutzman (Three Rivers) 1869, '70-'2, 1873-'4; H. H. Riley (Constantine) 1850-'1, 1862; Marden Sabin (Centreville) 1891-1893; Frederick Schurtz (White Pigeon) 1857-'8; Isaac D. Toll (Fawn River) 1847; Comfort Tyler (Oporto) 1859; Charles Upson (Centreville) 1855, served U. S. Representative 1863-64-65-66; J. G. Wait (Sturgis) 1863-7; Joseph R. Williams (Constantine) 1861, Pres. pro tem; Warren J. Willets (Three Rivers) 1887.

Representatives 1836-1930

Homer L. Allard (Sturgis) 1919-21; William Allman (Sturgis) 1857-58, 1877; E. S. Amidon (Sturgis) 1895; Edward J. Buys (Three Rivers) 1929; I. G. Bailey (Ft. Pleasant) 1840; J. W. Bentley (Mendon) 1883-5, 1887; Chas. Betts (Burr Oak) 1863-64; James G. Bishop (Burr Oak) 1881-82; Asher Bonham (Centreville) 1850; C. O. Boussum (Colon) 1909; J. H. Bowman (Three Rivers) 1838, 1845; P. H. Buck (Sturgis) 1849; J. G. Cathcart (Constantine) 1840; S. C. Chapin (White Pigeon) 1839; J. S. Chipman (Centreville) 1842; Leverett Clapp (Mottville) 1873-77; Andrew Clinne (Leonidas) 1871-74; Ezra Cole (Three Rivers) 1846; A. L. Driggs (Constantine) 1847; J. W. Frey (Three Rivers) 1853-54; Wm. R. Eck (Colon) 1867-70; Samuel Gibson (Constantine) 1897-98; John Hamilton (Constantine) 1879; F. A. Hassenger (Constantine) 1917; O. F. Howard (Three Rivers) 1865-67; Wm. Hull (Centreville) 1875; James Johnson (Sturgis) 1883-85;

Harrison Kelley (Sturgis) 1859; C. B. Kellogg (Constantine) 1895; Edwin Kellogg (White Pigeon) 1850; Columbia Lancaster (Centreville) 1838; John Lomison (Parkville) 1855; J. W. Mandigo (White Pigeon) 1869, 1870; Patrick Marantette (Nottawa) 1847; G. B. Markham (White Pigeon) 1877, 1881-82; L. C. Matthews (Colon) 1849; Neal McGaffey (White Pigeon) 1837; A. R. Metcalf (Constantine) 1841; C. L. Miller (Colon) 1853, 55; C. R. Millington, (Constantine) 1869-1872; Thos. Mitchell (Constantine) 1859; A. H. Moore (Mottville) 1851; Otho Moe (Sturgis) 1879; Wm. Morris (Sturgis) 1848; Wm. Mottram (Nottawa) 1843; G. W. Osborn (Parkville) 1891-92; W. F. Pack (Centreville) 1899; F. S. Packard (Sturgis) 1875; Fayette Parsons (Burr Oak) 1867, 1873-74; Levi Patchen (Centreville) 1848; R. R. Pealer (Three Rivers) 1889; Washington Pitcher (Constantine) 1845; L. B. Place (Three Rivers) 1915; Gardner Powell (Constantine) 1903; Milo Powell (Constantine) 1848; Otis Preston (White Pigeon) 1842; P. E. Runyan (White Pigeon) 1844; O. D. Russell (Sturgis) 1911; G. W. Schaeffer (Sturgis) 1913; A. W. Scidmore (Three Rivers) 1905-07; Martin G. Schellhouse, (Colon) 1837; Benj. Sherman (Centreville) 1835-36; Frederick Shurtz (Three Rivers) 1839, 1844; W. T. Smith (White Pigeon) 1869, 70; Wm. L. Stoughton (Sturgis) 1867-69; Edwin Stewart (Mendon) 1861-65; Hugh Stewart (Centreville) 1907-08; Bracey Tobey (Burr Oak) 1871; I. J. Ullman (Constantine) 1835-36; W. J. Thomas (Constantine) 1923, 1925; Comfort Tyler (Oporto) 1841; Isaac D. Toll (Fawn River) 1846; J. G. Wait (Sturgis) 1851; Hezekiah Wetherbee (Three Rivers) 1857-58; Charles P. Wheeler (Three Rivers) 1901; William Wheeler (Flowerfield) 1861-64; Washington Weld (Centreville) 1843.

John Stewart Barry, Governor of Michigan

Of the names on the Honor Roll of Peace worthy of special public recognition—though belated, is John S. Barry, for among the hundreds of immigrants, early Michigan presents no finer character study than the life of John S. Barry, of Constantine, immigrant of the thirties, a politician, statesman, one of St. Joseph county's most able citizens whose record, shorn of its greatness, comes down to us in meager, distorted anecdotes because, in the ill will of a civil war, he believed on the losing side.

At this late date the county has found State records that reveal his great influence and with characteristic justice it gladly pays tribute to John Stewart Barry, Michigan's third governor. He was born at Amberst, New Hampshire in 1802;

was educated in Vermont; became principal of an academy and later practised law. He was on the governor's staff and made a captain of the New Hampshire militia. He moved to Georgia and after several years came to Michigan and settled at White Pigeon in 1831. In 1834 removed to Constantine; was in partnership with I. W. Williard and engaged in mercantile pursuits. He had a warehouse and navigated a fleet of grain and flour boats on the St. Joseph river.

The granite shaft on the Barry lot in the Constantine cemetery, in five brief lines, epitomizes a life devoted to the public interests of St. Joseph county:

> "Pioneer of Michigan, 1831 —
> Member of the Territorial Legislature;
> Member of the First Constitutional Convention;
> Member and President Pro Tem of the First State Senate;
> Three times Governor of the State of Michigan".

His wife (Mary Kidder) died in 1869.

The earliest public records by Mr. Barry are those with his signature as justice of the peace for White Pigeon township, 1831-1835. He performed the first recorded marriage ceremony in the county and thereafter in the long processional of the pioneers who affirmed their truthfulness before Judge Barry were, not only wedding parties, makers and breakers of wills, circuit riders and land speculators, but also, the proprietors of village plats whose visions have since materialized in brick and stone.

Then we find him judge of probate with court sessions held at his warehouse in Constantine. During the tenure of these county offices we find him growing in public favor and note his growing influence in the political affairs of the times. He was elected to the Territorial Legislature and his old letters, on file in the Three Rivers Free Public library, reveal a canny political insight. He advised the establishment of more roads and better roads. He urged the opening of new postoffices and the distribution of postmasterships among the deserving". Of one postmaster, a Mr. A,—Representative Barry wrote: "I am not his advocate but as now he supports our cause, it would be injudicious in us at this time to ask or permit his removal. He is certainly an improper person for the office but as an untoward fate (Whigs) fixed him upon us in the first place, and a malign influence preserved him there until now, it is for our interest to let things remain 'status quo'."

One of the letters concerns the establishment of a postoffice at Constantine. Mr. Barry wrote from White Pigeon, 1834: "The Village of Constantine in this township is four

miles nearly north of this village. It is on the St. Joseph near the mouth of a creek and possesses a first rate mill seat. The village of Constantine will be the largest in the county and even now it contains three full story mills etc. and does more business than White Pigeon.

"The people of Constantine have tried to get a postoffice, but as yet have failed. The mail from Pigeon to St. Joseph, Berrien county, can go by way of Constantine, as can mail from Pigeon to Schoolcraft, without inconvenience.

"Thomas Charlton has been recommended for postmaster and he has my endorsement. Any assistance you can give will confer a favor on your constituency".

In another letter to Lucius Lyon, Mr. Barry reports: "One of the charges brought against a postmaster in St. Joseph county was charging $3.50 for a letter weighing one ounce, because it contained bank notes. The charge should have been one dollar. The same postmaster compelled some one else to pay his postage six months in advance on a newspaper, whereas the law required three months".

In 1833, the probate court was held at the house of Dr. Noble Loomis. The records show that a letter of administration was granted to Abigail Phelps, widow of Arauna Phelps, John S. Barry, Judge. Later in the year, probate court was held at Barry & Willards, White Pigeon. When the estate of Jacob McInterfer was probated, Michael Beadle represented Solomon McInterfer. Security was given for Elizabeth McInterfer, Susan M. —, Dolly Winchall and Sally McIntosh. Other estates which came before Judge Barry were those of Robinson Hazard, Rufus Downing of the trading post, and other early settlers.

In 1833 letter to the Hon. Lucius Lyon from Representative Barry, is a plea for St. Joseph county in behalf of a larger representation. Barry wrote: "If there is no possibility of our becoming a state soon, another member ought to be added to our elective district, in St. Joseph. We gave in this district precisely as many votes at the last election as Wayne. We have one member of the Council and Wayne three. We must have a third more people here. I continue in the mercantile business, it is prosperous. Our sales for last four months have been about $6,000. I mention this that you may know that the 'removal of the deposits' has not affected business here".

The Detroit Free Press eulogized Mr. Barry in the following:

"To reform the evil bequeathed by a Whiggery rule, Gov. Barry used the veto power to check wild and extrava-

gant appropriations. He is God's noblest work, an honest man.

"His adversaries referred to him as "Blue Ruin" candidate. Well, he did knock them cold in '41 and '43 and will in '50. Gov. Barry is a man of wisdom, firmness and honesty. We advocate the inflexible, straightforward, upright Barry."

Workers in the interest of temperance were busy and to gain their vote a story had been circulated that the ex-governor was selling liquor. To this came a certified statement of denial and the Western Chronicle's article follows: "Governor Barry is not selling liquor except for medical purposes and that upon certificate of a physician. The slander originated with the Niles Intelligence.

"That Governor Barry has heretofore kept liquor when engaged in mercantile business no one pretends to deny, but that he retailed it is charged as a slander. . . "

Judge H. H. Riley wrote: "I regard John S. Barry as a prince of pioneers. As a man he should not be forgotten, for no man worked harder to lay the foundation stones of this State on which you have built than John S. Barry.

"You remember that he sold the hay cut on the old Capitol grounds for three dollars. But do you know that to this sum he added $500.00 saved from a salary which was allowed for the services of a private secretary, which he said a bankrupt state could not afford, and with the $503.00 he defrayed the postage bills for the call of the second constitutional convention, a necessary bill which the legislature had failed to pass?

"John S. Barry had the confidence of the people of the State. When the State was poor and bankrupt and pushing internal improvements, trying to get money to buy iron to lay the railroad from Marshall to Kalamazoo, Michigan's credit was not good abroad. Barry said to the iron owners: "If you will not give us iron on Michigan's bankrupt credit, I will give you my credit. I will trust the State of Michigan. He did it, they took his name, he got the iron, we laid the road. Should he be forgotten?"

Mrs. John S. Barry

A most delightful sketch by Miss Emilie Comstock, of Mrs. John S. Barry, was given before the Abiel Fellows chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution and filed with their historical records at the Three Rivers library for public use. The sketch follows:

"In ascertaining a few of the salient characteristics of "the governor's wife," Mrs. John S. Barry, the compiler has consulted no printed books—as a matter of fact there were

none about her to consult, but she did have the pleasure of delving into the books of memory held by some of the older men and women of Constantine. Their stories prove that the governor's wife was no ordinary individual but one who shone in the lime light for certain strong characteristics that were peculiarly hers. Before her marriage, she was Mary Kidder, a native of Vermont. She talked with the accent natural to those of the eastern state and when she spoke of the Governor, as was frequently her custom, she pronounced the name "Mister Bahrrie". She and the Governor never had any children of their own but they adopted a son, Henry Dudley, who afterwards took the name of "Barry" and of whom both came to be exceedingly fond.

"Now, if one of our free verse writers, especially one of the type of Edgar Lee Masters, who does not hesitate to tell the truth bluntly, often cruelly, were presenting this, he would first of all inform you that the lady in question was not beautiful. She was tall of stature and angular, and her angularity was in marked contrast to the rotundity of Governor Barry. Were she living to day, she would undoubtedly be consulting the best known eye specialist of the land and undergoing an operation for the correction of an eye difficulty which would make her gaze more direct.

"Madame Barry's characteristics bring to mind the well known quotation from Proverbs: "She looketh well to the ways of her household, and eateth not the bread of idleness", for she brewed and stewed and boiled and baked and washed and ironed and when not hard at work in the duties found in the kitchen, she busied her ever active fingers in making ruffled shirts, for the governor, out of the finest linen. She did all this even though there were always two, sometimes three and even four, strong capable maids in the house. Her delight was in serving the Governor and for her the sun, moon and stars rose and set in him.

"All the 'memory books' consulted assure us that Mrs. Barry was exceedingly charitable, kind of heart and eager to be of service. In illustration of these virtues, one of those who knew her intimately, relates the following story: 'At one time there was living in the Barry household a young man who later enlisted for Civil war service. Many and many a time this young man was asked to take a basket, one of the proverbially well filled kind, to some one who was ill, some one who was unfortunate, or some one who would especially appreciate the delicacies it held. And always there was this admonition: 'Don't say anything about this, Charles'. It is said she often journeyed into the woods to hunt out herbs and plants for the brewing of medicine which she would carry to the sick. The

poor, the infirm and the needy always seemed to have her sympathy and compassion.

"Her frugality was an outstanding characteristic. It is told that when she was visiting Mr. Barry in Lansing and being feted and dined as was due her station, she was forced to leave the festivities given in her honor and go home. The urgent reason for leaving was that if she did not get home at once the grease she had been saving to convert into soap would spoil.

"At home she was too busy, too occupied in looking after the Governor's comfort to shine in society. One woman tells that if you wanted to see Mrs. Barry you could not depend on meeting her at some afternooon or evening function, but it was necessary to go to her home, and then undoubtedly you would be ushered into the kitchen, where, if she were not making soap, she would be busy at some other task disdained by many. Because she entered so little into the social affairs of her community, she was regarded by many as queer, eccentric, peculiar, or, as one man said, 'a curiosity.'

"The Governor was a regular attendant at the Sunday morning church service. He was always garbed in his best and wearing one of the ruffled shirts that 'Polly'—his nickname for Mrs. Barry—had made and washed and ironed, and a suit of black broadcloth, and he looked the fine gentleman he was. But it was a rare occurance to see Mrs Barry at church. She had to stay at home to oversee the maids, that the Governor's dinner might be cooked to a turn and woe unto the servant who let the meringue on the pie brown a wee bit too much."

Boyhood of John Bagley

Among Michigan's celebrities of the forties, whom St. Joseph county may claim, is Governor John Bagley, whose boyhood was spent at Constantine. He was born in New York in 1832. On his mother's side he was descended from Timothy Judson, a soldier of the American Revolution. When John was eight years of age, his parents removed to Mottville, and later settled at Constantine. John's father was a tanner and the family was in moderate circumstances. The future governor of Michigan began a business career in a little country store. Shortly afterwards he went to school at Owosso. Then at the age of sixteen, he sought work in Detroit, which proved to be with a tobacconist. His mother was a most remarkable woman and we are told that when John started out as a traveling salesman for the tobacco store, "she insisted that he take letters of introduction to the ministers and lawyers of each town. He laughed at the idea but his mother insisted

that it was the way a person worked, and the people with whom he associated, that revealed character". As a child, he had been admonished: "Black your boots, John. Every town must have first class children in it. Black boots and a clean collar will show you are to be counted among the best".

At another time, his mother corrected him for a fault—He replied, "Well, I only do it once in a while". And the mother quickly asked: "Would I trust a servant who stole only once in a while?" Leaning against the gate, John dolefully exclaimed: "Wish I could be like she wants me to be, but it's no easy thing to be the son of such a woman."

Something more of the mother of John Bagley may be gleaned from an old letter written by her in 1835, in which she says in part: "A cheerful face and a word kindly spoken, when I am gone I would rather that one should say: 'Here lies one who, when others crushed, gave me a helping hand, one whom I can never forget because of his friendship,—no marble monument can equal that'."

A letter written by John Bagley on his twenty-first birthday shows the strong tie of affection between mother and son. John wrote: "To many twenty-one is the happiest year of their life. They consider they are men, not boys, that they are rid of all legal and moral obligations to their parents. I have been thinking to day how much I owe to the best of mothers. All that I am or expect to be that is good came from her. Still how little I have done to repay her. She has often told Fred and me that having two such boys repaid her for all she had ever done, but how much better we could be if we had our lives to live over again".

Gov. Bagley's public career may be read anywhere but his love for his childhood home in Constantine may be gleaned only from old letters. In one dated 1854, he writes: "I realize that I am no longer a boy playing amid the flowers of the forest, or dabbling in the waters of the St. Joe; gathering knowledge from Webster's Spelling book or nuts from the tall hickory trees that surround our home. . . . To day I have been dreaming of past old times, old scenes, boyish loves and hates. . . The spelling schools and the walk home, the Saturday afternoons, the master's ruler and the fire we kindled with it, the snow-balling, the prize for being at the head and the shame for being at the tail of the class. The unpretending church without a bell or steeple . . . The old fashioned tuning fork, and the voice of the leader,—I can hear it now. I thought then as I sat and listened that no one but our choir could sing "Old Hundred" as our choir sang."

The mother's training and the spirit of the boy are shown in a school oration delivered at White Pigeon when John was

about twelve years old. The subject was: "The Importance of Improving the Season of Youth", from which we quote one paragraph: "Now is the time when, in the spring of life, when health sparkles in the eyes, when your blood flows purely in your veins and when the spirits are gay as the morning, to mould your future actions, habits and dispositions. On the manner in which you spend your early days depends your future destiny".

Franklin Wells

Another talented son of Constantine was Franklin Wells a descendant of Hugh Wells and his wife Frances of Colchester, England, who came with their children to Massachusetts in 1635, and the next year were among the first settlers of Hartford, Conn. They soon afterwards removed to Wethesfield, Connecticut.

John Wells, father of Franklin, was born in Colchester, Connecticut. He married Lucy Hollister of Manchester, Vermont. He was a merchant at Cambridge, New York, and later a hotel-keeper at Salem, New York, where Franklin was born, April 19, 1823. Mr. Wells was educated in the public school, with a few terms in Washington Academy at Salem.

In the spring of 1837, the family made the journey from New York to Michigan by wagon. They settled in Mottville Township, on the Chicago road, about two miles west of White Pigeon, but soon afterward moved to Constantine, where Franklin Wells lived the remainder of his life.

From 1838 to 1842, he was a clerk in the stores at the Willis & Williard House and also of Barry and Williard. He then became a partner in the store with Mr. Andrus. He continued in the general mercantile business, sometimes alone and sometimes with a partner, for about 30 years.

He was married to Helen May Briggs, a niece of Governor and Mrs. John S. Barry, Oct. 31, 1844. They had seven daughters and two sons.

In 1873 he sold his stores and gave his attention to the management of several farms which he owned near Constantine.

He was for several years a member of the executive committee and chairman of the business committee of the State Agricultural Society.

He was a delegate to many Republican county and state conventions and was active in the affairs of his church.

He was one of the incorporators of the Constantine Hydraulic Company, which built the dam across the St. Joseph river at Constantine.

The last thirty years of his life he was a member of the State Board of Agriculture, the greater part of the time being president of the board. He was first appointed by Governor Bagley, who as a young man had been a clerk in his store.

He was at one time township clerk, president of the village 1870-71, and was a member of the local school board for 25 years. From 1878 to 1890 he was Agent of the county for the State Board of Charities and Corrections. During the administration of President Harrison, 1889-93, he was postmaster; and Michigan agent and reporter of the Department of Agriculture. He died July 3, 1903.

THE OLD SWIMMING HOLE

Miss Ruth Hoppin

Frank D. Baldwin, C. M. H. *Major General U. S. A.*

CHAPTER XVII

ROLL OF HONOR—WAR

On the pages of history, St. Joseph, the patron saint of New France, is pictured as a kindly, beneficent spirit of protection and defense, invoked by the French voyager. In the Book of Saints, he is pictured in grey tunic and saffron mantle, carrying wallet and pilgrim staff.

The personified characteristics of his geographical namesake, reveals a much more militant figure, for St. Joseph, with other counties, in the course of the century has been compelled to change the saints grey and saffron of peace to buff and blue, and with flint-lock gun instead of the pilgrim staff a powder horn for the wallet, stand as a protector and a defender of principles. Then through the years of unfolding civilization, we find him as defender of his home, garbed in the faded brown and tattered homespun, as he guarded the Indian trails. In the blue of Company E, 15th U. S. Infantry, in the Mexican War, when at Cherubusco with the soldiers of Cass and Kent, Kalamazoo and Jackson counties, St. Joseph shares the glory of turning the tide of war from defeat to victory.

In the Civil War, breveted in rank for superior merit, the flag of the regiment honored and one of its men, Frank Dwight Baldwin, decorated with the nation's highest award, the Medal of Honor; and again we find St. Joseph in the Spanish American War with Company K of the 33rd Michigan National Guard; and yet again in the World War, in blue or khaki, in camp or cantonment, under the seas, on the seas or across with the 85th or "Les Terrible". As a soldier of Michigan, St. Joseph has maintained the traditional magnificent courage of Michigan at war, but through it all retained the kindly beneficent spirit that endeared the American soldier in a world at war.

The records of Michigan soldiers are scattered nation wide. The task of collecting them is great, but many appreciative agencies have been at work and the Three Rivers Public library has a fine collection, rosters of all wars, though none of them complete.

Revolutionary War

Through the Commissioner of Pensions, the records of pensioners of the Revolutionary War, living later in St. Joseph county, were obtained: Mede Hurd, pensioned for services in Connecticut line; Elisha Stanley, on the pension role for services in Connecticut; and Private Sweet. Other Revolutionary soldiers who are known to be buried in the county include: Mark Watkins, Leonidas; Pardon Field, Ketchum Corners;

Rev. Edward Evans, Constantine;; Blind Johnny Foust, Moorepark; and Ahira Brooks, at Sturgis.

There is a distinctive pathos about the lives of the Revolutionary soldiers who followed children or grandchildren to a home in the wilderness. The indirect testimony gleaned from the laws, under which the soldiers were pensioned, deepens the growing conviction that not the least courageous act in the life of a soldier of 1776 was his immigration to Territorial Michigan.

In the quiet little cemetery of Constantine, where are buried some of Michigan's greatest men, there lies Edward Evans, who served in the New York line under Lieut. Abraham TenEyck, 1781-1783. The Rev. Edward Evans was described in the "Constantine Mercury", Jan. 17, 1854, as "a soldier of the Cross and the Revolution, who lived in St. Joseph County. His youth was spent amidst the stirring events of the Revolution. He entered the Revolutionary army in 1781, at the age of 15, and was two years employed in active service. He was honorably discharged with his compatriots at the city of Albany. He entered the ministry in 1789 and settled in Enfield, Grafton County, N. H. Here Mr. Evans was elected a member of the legislature. Later he served 12 years as judge of probate.

"Joining the westward migration, Mr. Evans moved to western New York, then to Ohio. He spent the last seven years of his life with his children in Michigan. He was a member of Siloam Masonic lodge, Constantine." His grave was officially located by the Abiel Fellows chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution in 1907 and marked in 1917 by the Algonquin Chapter, of St. Joseph and Benton Harbor. A record of his life and descendants was compiled by the state historian of the D. A. R. in 1918, and was published by the Smithsonian war records.

In Leonidas village cemetery lies buried Mark Watkins, soldier 1776, who was born in Partridgefield, Mass. He enlisted as drummer boy, Jan. 1, 1776, in the company of which his father was captain. They were captured in the battle of Hubbardstown, Ct. July 7, 1777, and taken to Ticonderoga, where the boy was held four months a prisoner. It is related that Gen. Burgoyne, seeing the lad, pitied him, and sent him home as a present to his mother, the captain's wife. Mark Watkins served under Colonel Phinney, Colonel Brewer and Colonel Abiel Fellows until the end of the war. In 1784 he married Esther Legg in Partridgefield. In 1793, they moved to New York. In 1833 with his son Levi and family, Mr. Watkins came to Leonidas, where he followed farming and his trade as millwright. He died in 1836, and his will is

among the first 100 filed in St. Joseph county. His grave was officially marked Sept. 23, 1916 by the Abiel Fellows chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution.

Sturgis also has its hero of the war for freedom. Ahira Brooks, buried first in the "old cemetery", then in the new Sturgis cemetery. He was born March 10, 1760. He died in 1858. The fact that he was "A Revolutionary Soldier" is inscribed on his tombstone. In 1909, his name was officially recorded by the D. A. R. through Miss E. L. Newhall, Sturgis.

More recently the Abiel Fellows chapter located the grave of "Blind" Johnny Foust, a soldier of the Pennsylvania line, buried in Moorepark cemetery. His grave was officially marked by the chapter.

Still another soldier of the Revolution is Pardon Field, buried in the Pioneer cemetery at Ketcham's Corners. He served in Connecticut and his grave bears the official D. A. R. marker.

A revolutionary soldier whom St. Joseph county honors through the lives of his descendants, is Abiel Fellows, who served in the Connecticut line and fought in the battle of Saratoga. He was born at Caanan, Connecticut, October 17, 1764, died in 1833, is buried on the Fellow's farm at Prairie Ronde.

Mr. Fellows came to Michigan in 1829 and was closely identified with the settlement of Kalamazoo county. In honor of his daughter Lucy, (Mrs. B. E. Andrews), the organizing regent of the Three Rivers chapter Daughters of the American Revolution, the chapter was named "The Abiel Fellows Chapter," in 1905.

Mexican War

The war clouds of the "forties" were responsible for the old muster roll of 1845, loaned by Wm. Langley, which gives the following information:

"Militia roll of Colon Township for the year 1845.

"Names of persons liable to do military duty: Edwin Schellhous, Cyrus Schellhous, 'Phintast' Farrand (1820-1896, farmer), David Finch, James Noyes, Samuel Finch, Harris Norton, Horace Eggleston, John Tyler, G. H. Knapp, Stephen Atchinson (1819-1856), Auson Marvin, Horatio Austin, David Marrows.

"Names of persons pleading exemption, (reasons why exempted): Gilbert Liddle, weak eyes; Samuel Gorton, mail carrier; Leonard Schellhous, ill health; Louis A. Leland, mail contractor; L. C. Mathews, ill health; H. K. Farrand, weak eyes; Leonard Travis, ill health; John Booth, loss of finger; James R. Burns, loss of finger; Joseph H. Clowes, bad eyes;

George A. Garrison, ill health; Ira Garrison, burnt hands; Hiram Draper, sickness; A. C. Chaffee, weak eyes;

"Names of persons liable to do military duty: Florence Vaughn (1815-1883, farmer); Peter Wagner (1810-1889, farmer); James Maynard, Abel Finch, Daniel Wagner (farmer); Nelson Mathewson, John Booth, Daniel Booth, James Teller, W. F. Teller, W. M. Niles, Benjamin Adams, Daniel K. Adams, Harvey Dane (1823-1900, miller); Gardner Moorehous, Marshall Marvin, Osman Marvin, Lewis Shubert, Adam Bower, John Bower, Jr., Samuel King, George W. Brooks, Frederick Engle, D. C. Rogers, Joseph Davis, Abel Belote, Comfort Tyler, Dewitt C. Tyler, Samuel Tyler, Chas. Doughty, C. R. Hills, Alvin Hoyt, Franklin Doughty, Norman Bishop, Oliver H. Shaw, Noah Shaw.

"Names of persons exempted, (reasons why): Dave Lephy, broken shoulder; Rin Danberry, ill health; Chas. Bathrick, weak eyes.

"Names of persons liable to do military duty: M. P. Thurston, Gillean Hopper, Clinton Mop, C. A. Goodrich, Hugh McMilan, I. E. G. Hathway, Samuel Riley, Isaac Bower, W. M. Bower, Lofus Hyatt, Milton McMillen, Marcus McMillen, Henry Buys, Daniel Buys, John F. Knapp, Richard Buys, John Putnam, Tunis Putman, Chas. Lyons, Wesley Emery, Isaac Wagner, Isaac Eberhard, Solomon Eberhard, Loran McKey, W. M. Jackson, David Eberhard, Ambrose French, Ryan Buys, Barnard Eberhard, Wm. H. Castle (1812-1887, farmer), Chas. Rumsey, John Blain (1818-1876), machine shop, Wm. F. Bowman, James Palmer, Chas. Palmer, Myron Palmer, Chas. Tyler, I. D. Sutphen, Rockwell Hazen, Franklin Hazen, R. I. Hazen, David Gilberry, Robert English, Edward Haynes, Thomas Cutler, Sands Riley, A. B. Mills, E. F. Mills, C. W. Legg, Daniel Ricknor, A. W. Bradley, A. W. Belote, Tobias Born (1818-1890), merchant, Joseph Newton, J. Hazen, R. Williams, Bradley Goodrich, John T. Montrop, H. T. Williams.

Col. Isaac D. Toll and Company E, U. S. A.

In the Mexican war, which gave to our nation an additional area seventeen times as great as that of the state of New York, St. Joseph men in Company E. of the 15th U. S. regulars, carried the flag of the regiment. The company was commanded by Isaac D. Toll whose voice, rising above the din of battle, could be heard as it rang in the rallying call: "Michigan! Michigan! Rally to the flag, Michigan!" Splendid old St. Joseph company turning the tide of war,— a gallant prototype of St. Joseph's equally gallant men who fought in later wars.

The following is quoted from an address by Colonel Toll before the Michigan Pioneer Association:

"The 15th Regiment of U. S. Infantry was composed of five companies, three from Michigan, one from Wisconsin and one from Ohio, under Colonel George W. Morgan. Michigan companies were A, E, G. The two first ones were with General Scott in the Battle of Mexico. Company A formed the grenadiers and was on the right of the regiment under S. E. Beach. Company E. led by Isaac Toll had command of the colors and was the center of the regiment. It was composed of men from Niles, Kalamazoo, Grand Rapids, Jackson, Branch and twenty-five from St. Joseph county—"among them that peacock of all drum majors, Francis Flanders, who was as brave as Caesar".

Fawn River was the recruiting station. In later years Colonel Toll described the experiences in Mexico, the intolerable heat, the poor rations, the lack of equipment, the almost unbearable hardships of the war.. He calls the regiment the "Forlorn Hope" and vividly pictures the diminishing forces, but he said, through it all: ..Michigan companies A and E behaved splendidly under most galling and destructive fire concentrated upon the regiment. Of my company, the gallant Goodman fell early in the battle. He was in every respect a most superior man, soldier and gentleman . . . No choicer, truer spirit ever went down before a hostile bullet. My first sargeant, John Cunningham, whom because of illness I had ordered to remain at the rear, I found to my surprise in line as covering sergeant. Shot through the thigh, he continued to load and fire as he sat on the ground. He had no superior as a drill master and had rather be a second lieutenant than president of the United States. He died from his wound on the third day of battle. Daniel P. Hanks, the life of the file, and his half brother, Fitch Cornell, were each shot. So, too, Colonel Perkins, the ever useful N. B., John H. Cook, Clark Munson, Wesley Gordon, Richard Corbus, Isaac Smith; wounded, John McCann, color-bearer, received a stunning blow on the head while holding the colors but falling, he held fast, and they had to be removed from his dead hands by force. Lieut. Titus, ever cool and daring, distinguished himself by his steady valor. Sergeant William S. Smith, who had worked for my father as a mill-wright in Fawn River, was highly esteemed. I protested his going to Mexico with me. Go he would. He was afraid of only one thing, he said, and that was that he would not behave well under fire. He stood next to me—as the men fell around us his eyes had their usual calm, steady light, but he was impatient

to charge,—long before the command came. Sergeant Smith died of sickness on his way home.

"The achievements of the 19th and 20th of August, 1847, performed by half famished men, the marches and battles are matters of record". Colonel Toll spoke feelingly of the loss of Ludlow Cox, son of Deacon Peter Cox of Centerville; of Thomas W. Hamblin and of Solomon Gilmore of Branch county. "Corporal Horace Bartholomew of Fawn River, my old neighbor, son of Joseph Bartholomew, the first settler on the river of that name in Fawn River township, who with his two brothers, Levi and Theron, was among the first to enlist, on this day was among the foremost wounded. He was unfit to go into action, which he did contrary to my orders, he died at the company quarters in the castle of Chapultepec".

We are told that "Company E met with heavy loss because when ordered to advance, the flanking companies on either side, fell back leaving the colors exposed."

In an address given in Detroit in 1878, Colonel Toll paid the following tribute to Michigan's Companies A and E. "We see them at Contreras on the 19th of August, 1847, over the pedegral confronting Valencia with his vastly preponderating numbers, under a heavy artillery fire; at night on picket guard in a cold rain, 7000 feet above the sea; on the morning of the 20th, ere dawn, in line to assault, thence in pursuit with but a few moments rest at San Angelos; haversacks emptied the day before,—twelve miles to the sanguinary field of Cherubusco. The exhausted men filing rapidly on to Coyoucan, then to the attack against five times their number; Company E, it's captain wounded, it's first lieutenant killed, its first sergeant mortally wounded, it's color bearer shot down, grimly clinging to his colors, one half the rank and file disabled. Those who fell are not forgotten. Though no procession of tribute-bearing pilgrims may decorate their graves in a foreign land, this day we bring to them the immortelles of memory. Though no sculptured stone may record their virtues, an exalted national patriotism,— the crowning excellence of a civilized earth — is their monument. The pedregal of Contreras, the garitas of San Antonio, Belen and Cosme, the Puente Nacional, the cypresses, centuries old when Cortez conquered—all are mute witnesses of their valor as they rest."

Years after the close of the Mexican war, Colonel Toll in response to a toast: "Volunteers of Michigan," dwelt with great eloquence upon the necessity of adequate national defense that could be depended on in emergencies; pleaded that the youth of the land have opportunity for adequate training. "Though the spirit of our institutions is opposed to large standing armies, bitter experience has demonstrated that

though peace is most desirable, only sleepless vigilance can preserve that which our pioneer ancestors suffered for and died to obtain."

Fawn River's famous son Colonel Isaac Toll, was the son of Philip and Nancy DeGraffe Toll, who came to St. Joseph county in 1831; settled first at Centerville, then Fawn River. Col. Isaac Toll is descended from five generations of soldiers, his grandfather was a soldier of the Revolution.

Civil War

Ed. M. Prutzman

In the Michigan room of the Three Rivers public library there hangs a large picture of a young soldier—a boy in uniform, and no matter how briefly the early years of Three Rivers may be told, a tribute to this young man should be given, for Ed. M. Prutzman typifies the spirit of St. Jo' county—through a boy's heroic devotion to duty.

Ed. M. Prutzman was the son of the Hon. A. C. and Mrs. Mary L. Prutzman, pioneers. He was born in Three Rivers, September 11, 1842. He was educated in the Three Rivers schools and when the nation was torn by civil war he enlisted at Kalamazoo at the age of 20 as sergeant major of the Twenty-fifth Michigan Infantry. He was promoted to second lieutenant, Company 1, then as first lieutenant and in 1863 because of duty well performed at Louisville, Kentucky, commissioned as adjutant by the gallant Colonel O. H. Moore. He was sent to Green River to intercept General Morgan, then on to Knoxville. As a recruiting officer he came back to Michigan,—to Grand Rapids and Jackson. In August 1863 he became Acting Assistant Adjutant General, First Brigade, Second Division, Twenty-third Army Corps.

He was granted a furlough but so intensely did he feel his country's need that he made application at Washington to shorten his leave of absence. After ten days he was sent back to his regiment at Resaca, Georgia, where he took part in the battle of May 14, 1864.

His regiment participated in a charge which drove their opponents from a strong and well fortified position. The charge was made under a murderous fire of musketry and artillery, over an open field and through a creek with water waist deep. The regiment lost 50 men in less than five minutes and Adjutant Ed. M. Prutzman was among them. Mr. Prutzman went to Resaca, identified his son, and brought him back. He is buried at Riverside.

In appreciation of his spirit of devotion to his country in her time of need, the Three Rivers post of the Grand Army of the Republic was named the "Ed. M. Prutzman Post."

The service of St. Joseph county is epitomized in the following paragraph from the inscription on the Governor Blair monument, "The War Governor's" last message:— "Again and for the last time I commend the Michigan troops to your continued care and support. They have never failed in their duty to the Country or to the State. Upon every battlefield of the war their shouts have been heard and their sturdy blows have been delivered for the Union and Victory. It is my sole regret at quitting office that I part with them."

Frank Dwight Baldwin, Major General, U. S. A.

On St. Joseph county's Roll of Honor the name of Frank Dwight Baldwin, M. H., Major General, U. S. A., leads all the rest.

Breveted in rank for duty gallantly performed, twice decorated by Congress for dauntless courage beyond the line of duty, Major General Frank Dwight Baldwin's eventful life found fitting close when in recognition of his years of brilliant service, he was laid to rest with the nation's greatest sons at Arlington.

The life sketch of General Baldwin adds thrilling interest to an historic outline of great events of our nation. Beginning with his spirited entry, as a Constantine boy, into the United States Volunteer Army as a second lieutenant of the Michigan Horse Guards, continued by sagacity and courageous fighting as chief of scouts during the Indian campaigns and through gallantry and intrepidity advanced in rank in the regular army during the Spanish-American war and the Philippine Insurrection—and then "beyond the line of duty" after his retirement had become operative by reason of the age limit, again responded to the call of the colors during the World's war as Adjutant General of Colorado. Even a brief summary of the life of General Frank Dwight Baldwin proves the truth of General Miles declaration: "Frank Baldwin is a man, a real man, the bravest man I ever knew."

As a boy of eighteen, Frank Baldwin ran away from his home in Constantine to enter service and was promptly brought home. He ran away again, and again he was returned. Then a third time and with boyish defiance threatened to kill any one who again attempted to take him back. His parents finally consented and so when Company D, 19th Infantry was organized Frank Baldwin was made first lieutenant and mustered in, September 5, 1862.

In the Civil war he rose steadily, breveted in rank for duty gallantly performed, decorated for conspicious bravery beyond the demands of duty. General Baldwin's military records continuously bear testimony of splendid service through

five wars. As captain of Company D, 19th Michigan Infantry at Peach Tree Creek, under a galling fire, ahead of his own men, he singly entered the enemy's line, captured two of their commissioned officers fully armed, beside a stand of regimental colors.

Again in the Indian wars he was decorated for his gallant rescue of white girls by a voluntary attack on Indians who far outnumbered him.

When Lieutenant Baldwin was in the Southwestern division, with headquarters at Oklahoma, he played an important part in the Indian warfare. When asked about it, he laughingly declared one of the incidents was founded on a "bluff", loading tent utensils into an empty wagons and driving the mule teams as fast as they could run along a dry river bed towards hundreds of hostile Indians. He had only two companies with him and afraid the Indians would escape with the girls he could not wait for reinforcements. The terrific din of the wagons driven down the dry river bed frightened the Indians and they fled leaving behind them two of the prisoners whom the army was seeking. The story of the prisoners and their capture by the Indians was told by Scout Clark who served with Lieutenant Baldwin.

"With wagon and trailer a family by the name of Simpson had left Georgia for the far west. The family consisted of the father and mother, two older girls, Sophia and Catherine, two sons and two young girls, Julia and Adelaide.

One evening two young Indians appeared and were very attentive to the two older girls and one of them kept saying to Sophia: 'Ve-nah-is-tain Wak-ukh-tam' (Come to be at home in my tepee). The girls were frightened but finally the Indians left when Scout Clark appeared. He was interpreter at Ft. Reno, Oklahoma. He had noticed signs of Indians on the war path and warned the travellers. His apprehensions were justified for the Indians encircled the party and they entrenched, fought as best they could. Clark crept quietly through their lines and started for reinforcement. The Indians, however, grew tired of the siege and with their horrible war cry: "Shiv-e-i-e-yo-tait tah-nah-ho!" (Charge kill them!) After a desperate defense, the father and brothers were killed and so was the mother and the four girls captured.

"The two older girls were captured by Chief Stone Calf and his aide Kicking Bird, to whose belts hung the scalps of the murdered father and brothers. The shrieking girls were led away, the two little girls given into the charge of the squaws.

"When the soldiers came, the scene can be imagined. In swift pursuit they swung after them, Frank Dwight Baldwin as chief of scouts in charge of the Delaware Indian trailers and the white scouts, and of Troop D of the 6th U. S. Cavalry and Co. D of the 5th U. S. Infantry.

"Sighting the Indians, Lieutenant Baldwin ordered the charge of empty wagons. The Indians fled in terror, though shooting as they fled. A tent of buffalo skins seemed to be the object of much concern to the Indians. Lieut. Baldwin ordered the tent covered and 'any Indian that approached it carefully plugged'.

When the soldiers had time to explore the Indian camp, they found the tent of buffalo skins covered two of the most forlorn little girls ever seen, who said to the soldiers: "We are so glad you came, we heard sister praying for God to send the soldiers". One of the men—Scotty—constituted himself guardian of the little girls. The men contributed parts of their own clothing towards material for garments for the girls. Later Stone Calf tried to surrender to Lieutenant Baldwin but the army refused to accept his surrender until he surrendered the two older girls.

General Baldwin was on duty as chief of Scouts during the campaign against the confederated bands of Cheyennes, Keowas, Arapahoes and southern Comanches, participating in the engagements against them and continuing in duty until its successful termination, in 1875, by the utter defeat of all the hostile Indians in that region.

In 1875 command of the escort to Lieut. E. Ruffner, engineer, and later in the year accompaning Colonel Nelson A. Miles to Maxwell's ranch, New Mexico, where he successfully settled the threatened trouble with the Apache Indians. He acted as adjutant to six companies in the Rosebud operations against Sitting Bull and his confederated bands including Crazy Horse and other famous Indian chiefs,—engagements which resulted in the surrender of the Sioux, NezPerces and Bannocks. A brief sketch can give but few of the episodes in Gen. Baldwin's life.

In the Philippine insurrection General Baldwin was in the thick of battle as the story of the Datto and the "Green 27th" illustrates.

Colonel Baldwin was called to the states and arrived in San Francisco Dec. 4, 1901. There he immediately assumed command as colonel of the newly formed 27th U. S. Infantry enroute to the Philippines. Arrived at Parang-Parary, Mindanao P. I. Feb. 17, 1902, and there his work was as brillant as it had been in the past. He and his "Green 27th" were pitted against the Moros of Mindanao against

the Mohammedan tribal chieftains called Dattos, who had precipitated trouble by the murder of American soldiers. Our authorities demanded the surrender of the murderers, the Datto evaded and parleyed but to his request for further parley, Col. Baldwin replied: "Go to . . . !" We are going to fight!" and fight they did. "The green 27th. pounding at a walled fortress at the battle of Bayan. It was a battle in which the Datto personally sought to sever the head of Colonel Baldwin with his knife, then fell dead, the result of a bullet from Colonel Baldwin's revolver. They fought,—fought like the men they were, and the green 27th scaled the walls of the fortress and planted the flag there—the flag of the United States and of victory."

On receiving the news of the remarkable capture of the principal fort of the hostile Moros, President Roosevelt cabled: "Congratulations and thanks for splendid courage which has again carried our flag to victory".

Colorado claims General Baldwin and paid deserved tribute to him at a banquet given in honor of General John Pershing, at Denver, January 20, 1920. General Pershing paid the following friendly tribute to General Baldwin: "One thing has added greatly to my pleasure and that is to meet again my old time and distinguished friend, Frank D. Baldwin. I had the pleasure of serving under General Baldwin in the Philippines and to-night I acknowledge that whatever military training I may have is largely due to General Baldwin's bringing up".

General Baldwin acted as Adjutant General of Colorado during the World War, but Michigan claims General Baldwin because he was born in Michigan, married in Michigan to a Michigan girl, and began his great military record as a soldier in Michigan Infantry and there is little doubt that Michigan heartily endorses the letter by General Brooks, written several years ago to Senator J. C. Burrows of Michigan:-

"It occurs to me that Michigan could not do a more graceful thing than see that this officer's most valuable service during the war of the Rebellion and since, is not allowed to be passed over. Certainly his State, through its representatives in Congress, should, in my opinion, see to it that one of its most gallant sons be the object of solicitude to the end that his gallant deeds may not fail to be of record in its archives".

General Baldwin died at Denver, Colorado April 22nd, 1923 and was buried with military honors at Arlington, April 28, 1923.

In abbreviated outline the following tells the story of Frank Dwight Baldwin, Major-general of U. S. A.; born Manchester, Michigan, June 26, 1842; son Francis Leonard and

Betsy Ann (Richards) Baldwin; educated public schools, Constantine, Michigan and Hillsdale College; married Alice Blackwood of Northville, Michigan Jan. 10, 1867. Served in Civil War as 2nd lieutenant Michigan Horse-Guards, Sept. 19—Nov. 22, 1861; 1st lieutenant 19th Michigan Infantry, Aug. 12, 1862; captain Jan. 23, 1864; mustered out June 10, 1865. In regular army as 2nd and 1st lieutenant, 19th Infantry Feb. 23, 1866; transferred to 37th Infantry, Sept. 21, 1866, to 5th Infantry May 19, 1869; captain March 20, 1879; major Apr. 26, 1898; lieutenant colonel in General Volunteers May 9, 1898; transferred to 3rd Infantry Nov. 3, 1899; lieut. colonel 4th Infantry Dec. 18, 1899; transferred to 1st Infantry July 23, 1901; colonel 27th Infantry July 26, 1901; brigadier general U. S. A. June 9, 1902. Breveted captain Feb. 27, 1890, "for gallantry in action against Indians in Texas," and major "for gallantry and successful attack on Sitting Bull's camp of Indians on Red Water River, Montana," Dec. 18, 1876; Medal of Honor "for distinguished bravery in battle of Peach Tree Creek, Ga., July 20, 1864, "while serving as captain 19th Michigan Infantry; Medal of Honor "for distinguished gallantry in action against Indians in Texas, November 8, 1874". Commanded first body of civilized troops that ever successfully reached the south shore of Lake Luanao (Island of Mindanao), and after desperate encounter with Moros at battle of Byian, May 2, 1902, completely overcame them, Americans losing 51 killed and wounded out of 471, and the Moros losing over 300, less than 30 escaping; in command S. W. Division. Retired June 26, 1906. Adjutant general of Colorado, April 1, 1917—April 21, 1919. Degree LL. D. conferred by Hillsdale College, Michigan 1904. Buried at Arlington April 28, 1923.

World War

Harry Hill Bandholtz, Major General, U. S. A.

Though the Centennial Souvenir is a collection of stories of the earlier years of St. Joseph county, it would be very incomplete were recognition omitted of Brigadier General Harry Hill Bandholtz of the World War. General Bandholtz was born in Constantine, December 18, 1864, the son of Christopher and Elizabeth A. (Hill) Bandholtz, was educated in the schools of Constantine, was graduated from U. S. Military Academy in 1890 with the grade of second lieutenant and advanced through service to major general in 1923. He was appointed to the chair of military science and tactics at Michigan Agricultural College, 1896. He served with the 7th Infantry through the Santiago campaign and 2nd Infantry in the Philippine campaigns. He was made governor of Taya-

bas province and rose in grades until he was in command of the District of Southern Luzon and conducted the campaign which resulted in the destruction of Simeon Ola's forces. As commander of Central Luzon, he forced the surrender of Montalan and other outlaws. For his excellent service he was made Brigadier General and chief of Philippine constabulary. Other promotions followed. He became major of the 30th Infantry in 1915, and chief of staff, N. Y. Division on the Mexican border. Was chief of staff of 27th Division until Feb. 9, 1918, then commanded 58th Infantry. Served as Provost Marshall General of the A. E. F. September 1918 to August 1919. General Bandholtz served as American representative on the Interallied Military Mission to Hungary in 1919. He also commanded the 13th Infantry. After the World War he served in command of the District of Washington.

Among his many citations for extraordinary service were the D. S. M.; Commander French Legion of Honor; Croix de Guerre with palm; Commander Belgian Order of the Crown; Commander Italian Order of the Crown; Grand Cross of the Crown of Rumania; Montenegrin decoration and the Order of Commander Saints Maurace of LaSauris.

Through the years General Bandholtz kept a personal diary. It contains especially interesting accounts of the activities of the victorious Balkan nations and the alertness of General Bandholtz in protecting the invaluable treasures of the Imperial Hungarian Museum. It was General Bandholtz who was ordered to officially conduct the Arch Duke from the imperial palace and thus end the reign of the century old Hapsburg dynasty.

Lieutenant Colonel Cleveland Hill Bandholtz (born 1891) is the only son of General H. H. Bandholtz and his first wife, Alice May Cleveland whom he married in 1890.

Concerning his service overseas, General Bandholtz wrote: "I went overseas with the 29th Brigade. My first trip across was entirely for observation and at that time I went into action with the staffs of British and French officers. When I arrived in France with my American forces (29th Brigade) I went immediately into action at Verdun, from there I conducted drives at Argonne. I was required to be on the front lines most of the time". As Provost Marshal, to which position I was appointed after the first two drives, I had charge of the Military Police divisions and the supervision of the 50,000 prisoners of war.

"Three days before I was to sail for home with my forces I was ordered to report to Budapest, Hungary. I experienced much difficulty in getting there. . . . which I only did by getting reservations with Herbert Hoover by special train. Budapest

was a whirlpool of robbery, crime and Bolshevism". General Bandholtz denounced the cruelty of the Roumanian army in Hungary and ended with a strong plea for the preparedness of the U. S. A.

General Bandholtz died Dec. 5, 1925 and is buried at Constantine. A bronze tablet on the plain granite marker carries the following inscription:

"In loving memory of Major General Harry H. Bandholtz 1864-1925. Graduate of West Point, served in Spanish-American War; Governor of Tayabas Province, P. I.; chief of Philippine Constabulary; In A. E. F. as chief of Staff, 27th Division; Commander 58th Brigade, 29th Division and Provost Marshal General, American Representative Inter-Allied Military Mission to Hungary.

Beloved by all".

General Bandholtz served, also as Commander in Chief of the U. S. W. V., 1908.

Gold Star Honor Roll of St. Joseph County in the World War

(Note—Abbreviations used in this article: A. E. F., American Expeditionary Forces; b, born; d, died; ed., educated; eng., engagement; Inf., Infantry; m, married; s, son).

Austin, Harold Darwin. b. June 19, 1902 at Owosso, Mich.; s. of Lewis and Nettie E. (Walbridge) Austin; Ed. pupil Three Rivers High School; War service: Inducted into service, Jan. 15, 1916 at Elkhart, Ind. Private in C. A.-C., 66th; was stationed at Ft. Thomas, Ky; Ft. Adams, R. I.; Ft. Rodman—Hospital; Ft. Banker—Base Hospital, at Winthrop, Mass. where he died Nov. 19, 1919; buried Riverside.

Baer, Clyde Cicero. b. April 26, 1894 at Mendon, Michigan; s. of Charles and Katie Baer; Ed. in Mendon schools, occupation farmer; held residence at Mendon. War service: Camp Custer Co. A, 312 Engineers. Draft No. 806. Transferred Camp Pike, Ark. where he died Jan. 30, 1918; buried Mendon.

Becker, Gustave G. b. Dec. 12, 1900 Three Rivers, Mich.; s. of Fred and Ann Becker; Held residence Three Rivers; Occupation, Bookkeeper. War service: Inducted April 1917 as private in Co. K, 126, 32nd reg. At Grayling, Mich.; Camp McArthur, Waco, Tex.; Camp Meritt, N. J. Jan. 1918. With A. E. F. in France. Killed in action in American battle area, Oct. 17, 1918. Was in engagement of Romague; Sons; Monfauscon; Meuse. August 14, 1921 was buried at Riverside, Three Rivers.

Behan, William. b. March 6, 1889 at Ann Arbor, Mich.; s. of Christopher Behan. Was a barber, Three Rivers.

Died of influenza at Camp Custer, May 16, 1918 before being inducted into service. Would have been called May 25th.

Blood, Robert B. b. Jan. 31, 1901 near Bristol, Ind. s. of J. C. and Meda Blood. War service: Enlisted Feb. 6, 1917, Ft. Bliss, Texas, Troop 1, 7th cavalry. Died Aug. 13, 1921, buried Riverside, Three Rivers.

Brown, Arthur Floyd b. March 5, 1894, in Florence twp. St. Joseph county; s. of John and Mary (Pattee) Brown. Was lace maker at Marshall Fields, Chicago; Enlisted Oct. 3, 1917 at Waukegan, Ill. War service: Private, Co. E, 324th Inf.— Draft No. 1659. Transferred Camp Grant, Rockford, Oct. 4, 1917; Camp Logan, Houston, Tex. In training was wireless operator with 122 Field Artillery. Died at Houston Feb. 15, 1918; buried Centreville, Mich.

Cole, Harold. b. 1897. s. of Jerome Cole. married Myrtle Anderson of Houghton, Mich. 1916; War service: Entered Camp Custer, Sept. 15, 1918. Arrived in France Nov. 11, 1918. Died overseas Feb. 8. 1919.

Cross, Fred b. April 29, 1888 near Three Rivers, Mich. s. of Geo. W. and Mary L. (Bent) Cross. Was a farmer. Held residence Three Rivers. Military service: Enlisted March 17, 1918 at Lawton, Mich; arrived at Camp Custer, March 19, assigned to Co. I, 1st Battn, 160 Brigade at Camp Custer. Died at Base Hospital Camp Custer May 24, 1918.

Eberhard, Glen M. b. Feb. 3, 1898, s. of David W. and Alice (Stell) Eberhard at Colon, Mich. Pupil Three Rivers High School. Residence, Three Rivers. War service: Enlisted Oct. 12, 1918, Private S. A. T. C., U. of M. Ann Arbor. Died October 17, 1918, buried Riverside, Three Rivers.

Estes, Simon A. b. Jan. 16, 1898; s. of Alton B. and Clara E. Estes. Former resident of Mendon; graduated from Mendon High school. Died at Naval training camp, Mass. Sept. 27, 1918. Service: Co. 16 U. S. Radio School. Great Lakes.

Hass, Eugene b. Aug. 2, 1899. s. of Michial and Emma Hass; Residence Mendon. War service: Private 67th, 5th reg. Arrived in France the last of June, 1917. Transferred to Southampton, England, Oct. 1917. Killed in action at Belleau Wood June 7, 1918.

Hice, Louis Krum b. Aug. 24, 1894 at Three Rivers; s. of Bert S. and Eva M. (Krum) Hice. Student at Michigan Agricultural College. Machinist by trade. Residence, Three Rivers. War services: Inducted Sept. 19, 1917 at Camp Custer, 2nd Co. M. P.; Identification No. 297018. Transferred to Waco, Texas, Oct. 25, 1917; to Camp McAr-

thur Feb. 6, 1918. Overseas. Arrived at Liverpool, England March 5, 1918. Arrived France Mar. 13, 1918. Louis Hice left with the first contingent for Camp Custer and was the first Three Rivers man to die overseas.

The following excerpts from a diary kept by Louis Hice gives the itinerary of the troops from Texas to the front line trenches.

Feb. 2, Houston; Troma, La.; Lake Charles. Fayette got off for exercise, band played. New Orleans 6 p. m.; crossed Miss. river on car ferry at 10 p. m.

Feb. 8, Mobile, Ala. 6 p. m. Glimpse of Gulf. Nakome, Fla., Montgomery 1:30 p. m. exercise and march through Camp Sheridan, Ohio and Ind. troops. 5 mi out. Atlanta, Ga.

Feb. 9, Evansville, S. C.; Monroe, N. C. Exercises and cars fumigated.

Feb. 10, Richmond, Va. Washington, D. C. 12:00 served by Red Cross; Baltimore,—Tunnels galore. Susquehana river, some bridge. Philadelphia, served by Red Cross cigarettes and apples. Statue of Liberty 11:00 all aglow.

Feb. 11, Domont, N. J. Detrained, Camp abt. 3-4 mi. from Station.

great weather.

Feb. 25, Loaded on Olympic at 10 a. m.

Feb. 26, Left at 7 a. m. Life belts distributed to be worn all time. Sea rough.

Feb. 27, Mar. 1, On guard first night at sea—Taken off—sick; wow! Fellow doesn't care what happens. Snowed some.

Mar. 2, Storm—Our boat is numbered H. M. S. 2810.

Mar. 3, Some storm, in danger zone, waves over deck. gunners on 8 hrs, with 4 hrs off duty; Have 4 American destroyers at night.

Mar. 4, Got a sub., aft at 4 p. m. by depth bomb, saw it.!

Mar. 5, Harbor, 1 p. m.—docked at 3. Stayed on board.

Mar. 6, Enroute to Winchester—Coffee at Birmington. Arrived at camp at 4 a. m.

Mar. 7, Some beds and meals!

Mar. 10, Southampton, then aboard the St. George, La Havre

Mar. 11, At rest camp.

Mar. 12, Up at 5:30 a. m. and left in box cars, 40 hommes 8 cheveaux—corned beef and hard tack—a nights expierence never to be forgotten.

Mar. 13, First American issue of rations since the States—Hot coffee and apples. Some tired.

Mar. 18, Telephone school, In afternoon university of Spade and Pick.

Mar. 20, Confined to camp. Scarlet fever.

Mar. 22, Field day.
Mar. 31, Easter—Had communion and an official bath—a warm one—sure great. First one on guard. 23 men left for automobile school.
April 7, Official bath morning. Range afternoon.
April 8, Pete and I at Canteen.
April 13, Quarantine lifted.
April 20 Groomed horses all day.
April 21, Night—dead tired, had bath, mud to my knees—disgusted with absurd doings".

No letter was received from Mr. Hice after June 12. In that one he wrote of his regiment's being stationed in a little village just back of the front line trenches and that they were being continuously bombed.

Hill, Earle Laverne. b. May 18, 1891 at Lawton, Michigan; s. of Henry Hill. Married Nov. 13, 1914 to Fern Thorpe at Porter, Mich., July 1, 1896. Occupation, clerk. Residence Three Rivers. Service: Was 5 years on U. S. S. "Beals;"and cook 2nd l. on the "Managhan." He enlisted July 15, 1918 at Detroit in the navy. Assigned to Great Lakes. S. C. 2nd I U. S. N.; Died Sept. 24, 1918 at Waukegan, Ill.; buried at Marcellus, Michigan.

Hull, Levi Welsh. b. Sept. 15, 1890 at Constantine, Mich. s. of Lee Gray and Fanny (Welsh) Hull. A printer. Held residence at Constantine. Enlisted Sept. 7, 1918 at Camp Syracuse, a private in 91 Co. 22nd Battn. Identification No. 22623. Died at Syracuse Hospital Oct. 6, 1918.

Johnson, Raymond Warren. b. Nov. 9, 1891 at Marcellus, Mich. s. of W. W. Johnson and his wife Arvilla C. (Heckelman) Johnson. Occupation druggist; residence Three Rivers. Inducted June 24, 1918 at Centreville as private. East Lansing T. C. July 15, 1918; Transferred to Ft. McHenry Sept. 13, 1918. Died of influenza Oct. 4, 1918; buried at Riverside.

Klopfenstein, John. b. April 25, 1896 at Berne, Ind. s. of John and Katie (Hilge) Klopfenstein. Held residence at Sturgis. Enlisted at Centreville; Inducted in 328 B. G. Battn. at Camp Custer, Sept. 22, 1917. Identification No. 114673. Served overseas. Instantly killed April 12, 1918.

Krull, Rueben b. Jan. 4, 1892 at Fabius township, Mich. s. of John C. and Nettie (Laverance) Krull. Occupation farmer. Inducted into service at Camp Custer, Oct. 3, 1917; pvt. Co. I, 126 Inf. M. N. G.; M. Police, 85th Div. Served with A. E. F. France. Went overseas April

1918 from Waco, Texas, Killed in action at Chauteau Thierry, France Aug. 1, 1918.

McKenzie, Earl. b. Oct. 5, 1896 at Ft. Madison, Iowa. s. of Daniel and Ella (Buckingham) McKenzie. Joined the regular army 1916. Held residence in Washington D. C. Originally assigned to Battery C, 60th C. A. C. private, 1st class gunner. Killed in France Oct. 21, 1918.

Milner, George Edward b. July 7, 1892 at Chicago. s. of George E. and Margaret C. Milner; occupation, president of Constantine Casket Co. Served: Great Lakes Naval Station, April 4, 1918. Yoeman, promoted to paymaster's department. Died May 28, 1918 Buried Oakwood cemetery, Chicago, Ill.

Mowery, Clyde Leroy. b. March 24, 1894 Nottawa township. s. of Wm. K. and Mary Louise (Pitts) Mowery of Centreville. Occupation, farmer in Florence township. Enlisted in service May 4, 1918, entered Columbus, Ohio as private in 12th Co. 5th Sq. Transferred to Columbus, O., 1918, then to Waco, Texas. Died enroute May 19, 1918. Buried at Centreville.

Mowery, Vera s. of Henry Mowery. Died Feb. 9, 1918, in New Mexico. Buried Sherwood, Michigan.

Myers, Harold Allen. b. Aug. 27, 1900, s. of George W. and Effie Myers, Three Rivers. Served as private Hdq. Co. A. E. F. in Germany. Sailed June 16, 1919. Returned with prisoners to Fort Sheridan. Died May 6, 1921.

Newman, Harry F. b. Sept. 10, 1890 at Nottawa, Mich. s. of Otto Newman, residence Sturgis. Enlisted Chicago Sept. 1917 M. T. C. Corp. Co. A. 2nd supply train. Served overseas. Transferred from Columbus Bks, St. Louis to Ft. Sam Houston, Texas, Chickaumauga Park, Ga. and Camp Merritt, N. J. Died Oct. 9, 1918 in France; buried at LaVeurne, France, later removed to Sturgis (Oct. 23, 1921).

Oldorf, Freeman John, b. Nov. 17, 1889 at Fabius township. s. of Frank and Sophie (Grabbert) Oldorf. Farmer. Inducted May 27, 1918 at Camp Custer, Co. I, 127th Inf. transferred Camp Mills, Camp Merritt, N. J. Served with A. E. F. in France. Died in France (Meuse), reburied Riverside.

Parker, Henry L. b. April 5, 1889 at Parkville, s. of John W. and Ella (Dupes) Parker. Farmer. Indentification No. 2052038. Inducted April 9, 1918 at Camp Custer, private Co. H. 332 Inf. Overseas Aug. 25, 1918. Returned Mar. 25, 1919. Demobilized Dec. 3, 1918. Was in battle of St. Mihiel, gassed. Discharged December 3, 1918. Died March 8, 1920. Buried at Marcellus.

Pulver, Underwood F. b. Dec. 7, 1889 at Fabius, s. of Wandell and Rosena (Hartman) Pulver. Married Lillian Clara Kaup, of Chicago, April 15, 1911, had child, Lillyun Emma b. 1912. Residence Three Rivers. Occupation Chauffeur. Enlisted in Chicago as private in aviation mechanical training camp. Sept. 18, 1918. Died Oct. 29, 1918 at St. Paul, Minn., buried Riverside, Three Rivers.

Rexford, Harry, Residence Mendon. Inducted in Co. A., C. A.-C. 113 Field Artillery. Died May 6, 1917 at Camp Warren.

Robbins, Ralph Virgil. b. Sept. 1, 1895 at Monticello, Ill. s. of Jesse and Elizabeth Robbins. arr. at Camp Custer May 28, 1918, private Co. L, 340 Inf. Transferred to Camp Mills and promoted corporal. With the 85th Division to France. Left U. S. July 1918. Killed Dec. 4, 1918 at Fontainbleaux, France where he was buried.

Rose, Floyd B. b. April 14, 1983 at Hudson, Mich. s. of Geo. and Jennie Rose, residence Sturgis. Married Belvia Poorman June 1, 1911 at Jackson, had children: Grace, Ruth and Adraine. Inducted Camp Custer June 24, 1918 in Co. 1 339 Inf., 85th Division. Transferred to Camp Mills. Overseas service in Northern Russia. Died and buried in Russia.

Schrader, John b. July 4, 1900 at Buffalo, N. Y. s. of Wm. and Annie (Staley) Schrader of Sturgis. Enlisted Jan. 1917 at Centreville. Served with A. E. F. in France. Died June 13, 1918 at a Base Hospital in France.

Smittendorf, Eugene D. b. Oct. 3, 1888 at Williamsville, Mich. s. of Joseph and Irene (Preston) Smittendorf. Identification number, 2052451. Enlisted May 28, 1918 at Hudson, Mich. Inducted in service at Camp Custer May 30, 1918 as private 338th Co., 169 reg. transferred to Co. L 7th Inf. Served overseas. Died Oct. 18, 1918 in France; reinterred at Riverside, Three Rivers, Oct. 16, 1921.

Soule, George Ebenezer b. April 11, 1892 at Park twp. s. of Charles L. and Augusta (Thompson) Soule. Enlisted at Centreville April 2, 1918. Camp Custer as private Co. B, 55th Engineers; transferred to Camp Merritt, N. J. Overseas with 55th as private, 1st class, in Co. B. Died Dec. 7, 1918 at LeMans France.

Stears, Arthur b. Aug. 1, 1889 in Florence township, St. Joseph Co. Mich. s. of John J. and Emma A. Greenlee Stears of White Pigeon. Arrived at Camp Custer May 27, 1918. Private Co. H, 338 Inf.; transferred to Co. F 38th Inf.; transferred to Camp Mills, July 13. Sailed

July 22, 1918. Was in battles of Meuse, St. Mihiel and Argonne. Was taken prisoner by Germans at Argonne. Wounded Oct. 18 and died Dec. 11, 1918 at Vittal, France. Grave 257 American cemetery.

Not the glories but the horrors of the World's War and the splendid spirit of endurance which characterized the St. Joseph county men, are shown in a letter written by Arthur Stears and published in the Daily Commercial of December 31, 1918.

He writes: "I am writing this from the Base Hospital in France. I feel that I have done my bit in this great war for I have lost my left leg. I was transferred from the 85th to the 3rd. Was in Co. F 38th. This was four times filled in with new men and fifty four added to Co. F and I was one of the new men. The 38th was called the "Rock of the Marne" for courageously holding back the Germans under great odds in the battle of July. I am proud to belong to the 38th.

"I have gone through many trying experiences and lots of suffering and have seen terrible sights—towns and homes destroyed. I was wounded and captured on the Argonne front Oct. 18 at two in the morning. I had been sent out as a runner to see who was on the right flank and I ran into the Germans, thinking them French. They shot at me and wounded me in my left leg. I crawled away but they found me and took me to a first aid station and for several days took me from one place to another, finally on Oct. 24 to the hospital at Longway. The Germans found blood poison had set in and did not operate. Would have been better off in an American hospital. After the Germans evacuated, the French cared for me until the Americans came . . . I hope my next move is to the U. S. A.

Stenberg, Lyall F. b. July 14, 1892 in Porter twp. s. of P. O. and Lottie Stenberg of Constantine. He entered service at Milwaukee, Wis. and went to Camp Grant May 1918; overseas in July 1918. Was killed in action Nov. 6, 1918 in France.

Swartz, Robert Edward b. April 15, 1894 at White Pigeon. s. of Edward and Clara Swartz of White Pigeon. Arrived in Camp Custer May 27, 1918. Inducted in Co. H. 338 Inf., 85th Div.; transferred to Co. C 162 Inf., 3rd Div. Served overseas with A. E. F. in France. Died in France Sept. 23, 1918. Reinterred at White Pigeon Oct. 29, 1920.

Symon, Donald A. E. b. Nov. 9, 1894 at Vandalia Mich. Inducted in army at Camp Custer Aug. 29, 1918. Died there Nov. 5, 1918.

Van Fleet, Frank b. March 20, 1892 at White Pigeon. s. of Joseph and Cora Gardner Van Fleet. Enlisted in navy March 1918. Entered Naval Reserve Force, at San Pedro, Calif. Transferred to Pelham Bay, N. Y. and Cape May N. J. Acted as listener on U. S. submarine chaser No. 74. Died Nov. 11, 1918 at Cape May N. J. Buried at White Pigeon.

Van Selous, Emery William b. Oct. 20, 1892 in Branch Co. Mich. s. of Carl and Mary (Cook) Van Selous. Residence Three Rivers. Inducted in army as a private at Columbus Bks. May 10, 1918. Served in France with 155 Air Squad. A. E. F. Died Nov. 28, 1918. Buried in France, later reinterred at Constantine.

Welty, Russell W. b. March 25, 1895 at Colon, Mich. s. of Frank Frease and Marie H. (Liddle) Welty. Inducted in service May 27, 1918 in Co. H. 338th Inf. at Camp Custer. Transferred to Co. F. 38th Inf. Overseas. Died at Treves, Germany, Dec. 18, 1918.

Wenzel, Byron Walter b. Oct. 16, 1890 at N. Y. s. of William and Ida (Wiand) Wenzel of Sherman twp. Inducted in service as private 37th Co. 10th Battr. 160 Depot brigade. Transferred to Co. A, 126th, 32nd Div. at Camp McArthur, Texas transferred to Camp Merritt, N. J. Overseas Feb. 1918. Was in all battles of 126 Inf. to date of his death. Was killed in action during the battle of Soissons. Aisne-Marne, Oise-Aisne def. Buried at Sturgis.

White, Marshall G. b. Sept. 15, 1893 at Mendon, Mich. s. of Otis S. and Clara May White. He was inducted in service at Camp Custer May 25, 1918 in Co. F, 337 Inf., 85th Division. Promoted to Corporal. Served with A. E. F. in France. Returned to U. S. April 4, 1918. Died at Kalamazoo hospital April 27, 1920. Buried Riverside, Three Rivers.

Wood, Clark b. April 1, 1896, Porter twp. Van Buren Co., s. of Hiram and Hannah (Bennett). Enlisted at Kalamazoo May 9, 1917. First camp at Grayling, Aug. 17, 1917 in Co. C. 32nd M. N. G. Transferred as corporal in Co. C, 126 Inf., transferred to Co. A 126th at Camp McArthur. With A. E. F. in France. In battle of Verdun. Killed at Argonne, buried in France.

Wood, Wm. Henry b. Jan. 21, 1889 at Porter twp. s. of Hiram and Hannah (Bennett) Wood. Enlisted at Kalamazoo April 9, 1917. Inducted in Co. C., 32nd M. N. G. Died May 30, 1917, buried in Riverside, Three Rivers.

St. Joseph county has on file the records of over one thousand men from St. Joseph county who served in the

World's War. They were among the corps of whom Gen. John J. Pershing, commander-in-chief of the American army in France, issued the following order:

General Pershing's Tribute

"It fills me with pride to record in general orders a tribute to the service achievements of First and Third Corps, comprising the First, Second, Third, Fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Thirty-second and Forty-second divisions of American Expeditionary Forces.

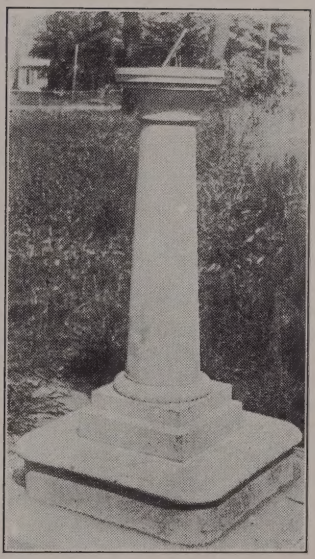
"You came to the battle field at a crucial hour for the Allied cause. For almost four years, the most formidable army the world has yet seen had pressed its invasion of France and stood threatening its capitol.

"At no time has that army been more powerful and menacing than when, on July 15, 1918, it struck again to destroy in one great battle, the brave men opposed to it and to enforce its brutal will upon the world and civilization.

"Three days later in conjunction with our Allies you counter-attacked. The Allied armies began a brilliant victory the marks the turning point of the war. You did more than give the Allies the support to which, as a nation our faith was pledged. You proved that our altruism, our pacific spirit and our sense of justice have not blunted our virility or our courage.

"You have shown that American initiative and energy are as fit for the tasks of war as for the pursuits of peace. You have justly won unstinted praise from our Allies and the eternal gratitude of our countrymen.

"We have paid for our success with the lives of many of our brave comrades. We shall cherish their memory always and claim for our history and literature their bravery, achievement and sacrifice."



Sundial at John H. Bowman Park

"May the prosperity of St. Joseph be as fair as her lovely daughters;—may its enemies find only open stages, poor fare and a cyprus swamp at the end of their journey."

— Col. Savery's toast at the first Fourth of July celebration in the county, 1833.

List of abbreviations used in the FACT INDEX and their meaning:

(a)—St. Joseph County Album.
anc—ancestor.
b.—born.
B. O.—Burr Oak township.
Cent.—Centreville.
ch.—child or children.
co.—county.
Col.—Colon township.
Cons.—Constantine township.
d.—died.
dar.—D. A. R. manuscript records.
D. A. R.—Daughters of the American Revolution.
ed.—editor.
Fa.—Fabius.
fam.—family.
Fl.—Florence.
Flow.—Flowerfield.
(gr)—grave stone record.
(h)—St. Joseph County History.
Lpt.—Lockport.
m.—married.
M. D.—physician.
Mend.—Mendon township.
Mot.—Mottville twp.
(np)—newspaper record.
Not.—Nottawa township.
p.—page.
pion.—pioneer.
pres.—president.
s.—son.
S. A. R.—Soldier American Revolution.
Sher.—Sherman twp.
Stu.—Sturgis.
T. R.—Three Rivers.
Terr.—Territorial
twp.—township.
w.—wife.
W. P.—White pigeon prairie or township.

The Fact Index includes names of pioneers recorded by Abiel Fellows chapter, D. A. R., at the st. Joseph County Fair, held at Centreville, September 18, 1930. It also includes other names of pioneers not mentioned in the text but given in memoriam. To this material has been added data useful in genealogical research for the genealogical lines of St. Joseph county people.

Abbey, Wm., S. A. R.; anc. Charlotte (Abbey) Davis—Mrs. A. D.

Abiel Fellows, chap., D. A. R.—organized 1905 by Lucy (Fellows) Andrews — Mrs. B. E.

Adams, Edward, m. Mary Mosher; pion. 1835, Fl.

Adams, Isaac O.—M. D. (h); pion. 1830.

Adams, John E. (a); b. 1817; m. Mary Metler; pion. 1835.

Adams, Samuel (a); s. John and Sarah (Porter) A.; m. Senesa Straw; pion. 1835, Fl.

Addison, H. N. (a); m. Lovisa (Ransom) 1848; pion. 1857, Leon.

Allen, Capt. Moses (h); prospector, 1826.

Allison Brothers, (np) pion. 1832, Cent.

Allman, Wm. (a) m. Louisa Fairchilds; pion. 1838, Stu.

Anderson, John W. (h) First reg. of deeds; pion. abt. 1829; p. 42.

Andrews, Bishop E. (1846-1918); m. (1) Lucy Fellows (1847-1907); p. p. 155. m. (2) Helen (Kline) Sanderson (Mrs. Jesse)

Andrews, Jonathan (dar) (1756-1806) S. A. R.; anc. L. (Lathrop) Phillips—Mrs. E. E.

Andrews, Col. Norman S. (gr.) (1842-1882); m. 1852, Martha G. (1835-1916); surveyor; pion. 1851, W. P.

Andrews, Martha G., intro.

Andrews, Seymour H. (a); s. of Nathan and Orpha Butler A.; m. (1) Chloe Benson, (2) Keziah L. (Hazen) Griffith; pion. 1854.

Annin, Wm.(dar)(1715-1784); S. A. R.; anc. Katherine (Kline) Sine—Mrs. L. P.

Archery, p. 21.

Arks, see River Arks.

Armitage, John (gr) 1824-1894; m. 1847, Mary J. Boudeman.

Armitage, Wm. (gr); b. 1791, Engl., m. Bathseba, b. 1797 Engl.; pion, 1836, Not.; p.

Arney, John (h) b. 1786, Engl. Eng. Brit. sold. in Amer. rev.; m. Ruth; 8 ch.—; p. 157.

Arney, Wm. (h), pp. 88-9; p. 145-150.

Arnold, George, Mayor T. R. 1913.

Arnold Family, p. 127; 129; 149.

Ash Family, p. 88.

Aspenwall, L. A. Pres. T. R., 1890.

Austin, H. D., p 186.

Authorities quoted, V.

Avery, Esther, School libr'n T. R., p. 155.

Avery, Oliver T., Mayor T. R., 1920.

Babcock, Samuel B.; m. Elizabeth Groves; pion, 1854, Not.

Backus, C. W., M. D. (gr) (1840-1888); m. Martha Caldwell.

Baer, C. C.; p. 186.

Bagley, John J. (1832-1881); Gov. Mich. (1873-1877); Boyhood, p. . 169-171.

Ballou, Danford G. (a); m. Cynthia Warralls; pion. 1838, Pk.

Baldwin, Frank Dwight (1842-1923); Bri. Gen U. S. A.; p. p. 180-'4.

Bandholtz, Harry H.. (1864-1925); Bri. Gen. U. S. A., p. p. 184-'6.

Banks, wild-cat and red-dog, p. 55.

Barker, David (1731-1815); S. A. R.; anc. of Ida (Barker) Younglove—Mrs. F. M.

Barkman, Harvey (1829-1899); m. 1860, Ardella Pierce.

Barrows, Mrs. H. P.—story of Sau-ga-nash, p. 29.

Barrows, Julius M.; m. 1849, Eliza Hammond, pion. 1851, Stu.

Barry, John S. (Gov. of Mich., 1842-'6; 1850-'2); pion. 1831, W. P. p. p. 164-'7.

Barry, Mrs. John S., p. p. 167-'9.

Bartlett, George, m. 1849 Harriet F. Bouton.

Barton, Benjamin (dar); (1750-1830); S. A. R.; anc. of Adda (Barton) Orton; others.
Barton, George W. (1830-1896); m. 1856, Esther E. Brooks; pion.
Basset, Isaac (c. c.); m. 1843 Lucinda Boutwell; pion.
Bateman, David M. (ch); (1733-1801); s. of Dr. F. C. B.; m. Mary, dau. of T. M. Clark, pion.
Bateman, C. C., Mayor T. R., 1917.
Bates, Orsamus C. (a) m. Sarah M. Harwood; pion. 1833, Cons.
Baum, John (a); m. Lydia J. Spencer; pion. Lpt.
Baumister, John (a) m. 1859, Sophia Stull; pion. 1855, B. O.
Beadle, David, p. 87.
Beadle, Mishael (h) (1788-1839); m. Ruth Bidwell, pion. 1827-'9; Flow., p. 86-'7.
Bear, (or Bair) John, hunter; pion. 1827, Cons.; p. p. 83-'4.
Beardsley, A. M., Scenes of the Backwoods, p. p. 84-'5.
Becker, G. G. p. 186.
Beckwith Levi (np); m. Lucinda Starkweather; pion. 1828, Mot.
Beckwith, O. S. (np); pion. 1835, W. P.
Beerstecher, C. A.; m. 1866 Maria A Hoff, pion.
Behan, Wm., p. 186.
Bellairs, Wm. (a) m. Ruth Julian, pion. 1857, W. P.
Belote, Asa W., m. 1847 Ellen Lovitt, pion.
Bennett, Asa (a) m. 1838, Sally Goram; 7 ch.; pion. 1838, Not.
Bennett, Jonathan G. (1825-1894); m. Jane E. (1832-1914) pion. 1838.
Bennett, Johnson, Pres. T. R., 1885, '87, 1891-'2.
Bishop, Isaac (1758-1846); S. A. R.; anc. of Edna (Sabin) Hoffman.
Bishop, James (1751-1827); S. A. R.; anc. of Lotta (Bishop) Nicholls — Mrs. George.
Bishop, James L. (a) m. Mary Carpenter; 8 ch.; pion. 1836, B. O.
Bishop, Lyman (1819-1862); m. 1861 Cora Brooks, pion.
Black Hawk War, p. p. 36-41.
Bliss, Isaac G., m. Louisa Pixley; pion. 1854. Flow.
Blodgett, Ezra (1773-1876); p. 124.
Blodgett, Joshua (1722-1816); S. A. R.; anc. Winifred (Dunn) Morency — Mrs. A. G.
Blood, Charles L. (1827-1907); m. 1858, Mary Ely.
Blood, Robert, p. 187.
Blue, Isaac (1809-1880); pion. W. P.
Bonebright, Jacob (d. 1857); m. Barbara Myers; 9 ch.; pion. 1829, Cons.
Bonham, Arthur (1808-1891); pion.
Boudeman, Wm. (1808-1890); w.; and s. Dallas B., pion. 1850, Flow.
Bourn, Ezra (a); m. Lois Hicks; pion. 1841, Mend.
Bouton, Wm. (1749-1828); S. A. R.; anc. E. (Bartlett) Sager.
Bower, Adam, m. Hannah C. Richards, pion. 1836, Col.
Bower, John, m. Diana Gerhart, pion. 1836, Not.
Bowman, John H. (h) (1796-1855); biog.; p. p. 57-'8.
Boyles, George (a) pion. 1847.
Bridgeman, Orlando (dar) (1743-1813); S. A. R.; anc. of Mable (Fulcher) Caldwell; others.
Brooks, Ahira; S. A. R.; p. 175.
Brooks, Joseph A., m. Phoebe Houston, pion. 1844, B. O.
Brown, A. F., p. 186.
Brown, Matthew (dar) (1732-1777); S. A. R. anc. of Anna (Willemin) Barrows.
Brown, Dr. J. J.—mentioned p. 59.
Bruin Barbecue, p. 48.
Buck, Benjamin C. (a); pion. 1828.

Buck, George (1792-1854); pion. 1830; p. p. 53-56.
Buck, Henry, S. A. R.; p. 53
Buck, Martha (Irey); pion. p. p. 53-'6.
Buck, Philip H.; pion. 1829, Stu.
Bucks Tavern, p. p. 54-'6.
Buel, Cyrus (c. c.) (1829-1899); m. 1852 Clarissa Fletcher, pion. Not.
Buel, Joseph L. (1808-1896) m. 1828 Elizabeth Gillett, pion.
Bullock, Jay, Mayor T. R., 1922.
Burch, Hosea (1827-1897); m. 1851, Ellen Stone; pion. 1852, T. R.
Burch, John W. (1828-1864).
Burch, Peter (1797-1851).
Bumphrey, M. H., Mayor T. R., 1895-'6.
Burger, Henry and w. Sarah; pion. 1847, Cons.
Burnette, Wm., Fur Trader, p. p. 9-11.
Burnham, John and Mary (a); pion. 1831, Cons.
Butler, Benjamin, s of Joseph and Rebecca (Newton); pion. 1841, Not.
Burr Oak Twp., organized, settled, p. 102; Census of 1850, p. p. 102-109.
Cabin, Building the, p. 115.
Cade, Thomas (1786-1879); pion. 1830, p. 112, Sher.; p. 48.
Calam, Tindil H., (b. Engl.); pion. 1830, Cons.
Caldwell, Wm. (1831-1905); m. 1859, Martha A. Wilcox; Pres. T. R. 1877; pion. 1852, Flow.
Calesthenics and Dumb-Bells, p. p. 161-'2.
Calhoun, Alvin (c. c.) m. 1843, Lois Bean; pion. 1829, W. P.
Calhoun, Andrew (np) pion. 1830, Fl.
Campbell, Mrs. James H., historical collection p. 14.
Carpenter, Charles (1810-1890).
Carpenter, Sidney, m. 1833, Eunice Brown, pion. 1836, B. O.
Carpenter, Younglove C., pion. 1836, Mend.
Cary, Nathan B., m. 1861, Mary E. Francisco; pion. 1854.
Case, Abram (gr) (1804-1890).
Case, F. H. (gr) (1857-1920).
Case, Hiram, m. 1842, Laura Ketcham; pion. 1834, Cons.
Case, R. E. (gr) (1828-1903) ed. News Reporter; pion. 1842, Cent.
Cass, Lewis, Terr. Gov. of Mich. 1814-1831; p. 7.
Cassoway and Gibson Trading Post, p. 11.
Castle, Wm. H., m. 1837, Mary T. Webster; pion. 1835, Col.
Cathcart, John (np); pion. 1831, W. P.
Cathcart, Wm. (np); pion. 1831, W. P.
Cattell, Wm. and Fam., pion. 1855, Not.
Catton, John and Wife Mary (Barnard) and s. Joseph B. Catton; pion. 1833.
Census 1850: Burr Oak twp., p. p. 102-109; Park twp., p. p. 94-102; Florence twp., p. p. 116-124; Lockport twp., p. p. 62-74.
(The "age" in each record is to be considered as only approximately correct)
Centreville settlement and organization; p. p. 41-44.
Chadwick, Samuel (Capt. 28th Mich. Inf.) pion.
Chandonnai, Jean Baptiste half breed fur trader with Wm. Burnette, 1792-1799. In war 1812; owned 2 sections of land on St. Jo.
Chapin, David and Wife Collie (Burch); pion. 1836, Sher.
Chapin, Israel (1740-1795) S. A. R. anc. of Effie (Chapin) Van Selous—Mrs. J. L.
Chapin Southard m. Rozella McCloud, pion. 1836, Sher.
Charlton, Thomas, pion. Cons.; p. 126.
Cheever, Walter H., Supt. of T. R. Schools, 1887-1890, p. 155.
Cheley, F. H., author "T. R. Kids," p. 76.

Chicagua Trail, p. p. 7-8.
Childs, James O, (a) s. of Lloyd C.; pion. 1834, Cent.
Christmas Customs, p. 93.
Churches—organization of, p. p. 47; 143-'4.
Clapp, Ashel and Charlotte (May); pion. 1835.
Clapp, Ebenezer (1745-1807); S. A. R.; anc. of Meta (Mowrey) Tombaugh others.
Clark, Duncan, (h); pion. 1828, W. P.
Clark, Jason and Lucy A. (Dunham) C. and s. George; pion. 1834.
Clark, John B. family opened first tavern in Stu., pion. 1834.
Clark, Robert, pion. 1830, Cent.
Clark, Thomas M. (1816-1882); m (1) Maria Spencer, m. (2) Elizabeth Hoffman; Pres. T. R., 1860; pion. 1840, B. O.
Clark, Wm., m. Margaret Whitney; pion. 1840, B. O.
Clark, W. E. — M. D. (gr) (1851-1912) m. (1) Ursula J.; m. (2) Ella M. (Wolf). Mayor T. R. 1907.
Clayton, Walter F., Jr., Mayor T. R., 1926.
Cline, Cornelius, pion. 1840, Not.
Clowes, Joseph and Ann E. Dunkin, pion. 1832, Not.
Clute, W. H., editorial p. 141.
Coats, John, m. Ellen Romans; 8 ch.; pion. 1829, W. P.
Coffinberry, J. W. (np); pion. 1830.
Coffinberry, Salathiel C. (gr) (1809-1889); pion. 1843; story of Black Hawk War, p. p. 39-41.
Cole, Ezra (b. 1800, N. Y.) Pres. T. R. 1856-'7; m. 1818, Betsy (Maker); p.p. 145-'6; pion. 1839, p. p. 145-'6.
Cole, G. W., Mayor T. R., 1914-1916.
Cole, Harold, p. 187.
Cole, Herman, pion. 1838, T.R.
Cole, Levi (a); pion. 1857, Mend.
Colon Twp. settlement and organization, p. p. 45-48.
Colver, Peter (1815-1888), wife Margaret, pion.
Congressmen from St. Joseph co., p. 163.
Connely, Lolita, Census copiest, p. 74.
Connor, Wm. (1802-1897); m. (1) Sarah Ann (Rapalje); m. (2) 1838, Ann Janette Powers; 1836 elected Judge probate; pion. 1829, Not., p. 37.
Constantine Twp., organization and settlement; p. p. 126-130.
Constantine Pergola, p. 127-'8.
Coohon, John C.; pion. 1856, Col.
Cook Book, p. 92.
Cooke, George A. B. C. (1842-1926) m. 1840 Sarah M. Rice; editor of T. R. Tribune, 1878-1895; pion. T. R., 1863; p. 153.
Cooke, Elisha (dar) (1717-1799); S. A. R. anc. of Florence (Cooke) Van Horn—Mrs. V. H.
Cook, Peter (np); pion. 1828.
Coon, Mrs. F. H., comp. "Early Courts;" p. p. 42-'3.
Cooper, Henry; pion. 1855, T. R.
Corey Lake; p. p. 75-'6.
Corner, George, m. 1863, Margaret Ann Herr, pion.
Corry, Joshua, p 75.
County Records Stolen, p. p. 138-'9.
Cowling, Annette, Story of Methodists; p. 146.
Cowling, John (1820-1909) m. 1844 Mary A. Wilson; p. 151.
Cox, John (a) m. Mary C. Hiles; pion. 1857, Lpt.; p. p. 148-'9.
Craw, Marshall and Wife Ann (Sloan) C.; pion. 1833, Fl.
Craw, Orin, (np), pion. 1833, Fl.
Crawford, James, s. of Robert and Mary (Shannon) Crawford; pion. 1830, Cons.; p. 123.

Crawford, Robert (c. c.) m. 1842, Janet Osborn.
Creveling, Nelson (a) m. Phoebe Eck, dau. of Joseph and Mary (Rittenhouse) Eck; pion. 1845, Lpt.
Cross, Fred.; p. 187.
Cross, Wm. (c. c.) m. 1836, Anna Coats, W. P.
Cross, Wm. (a) and family, pion. 1842, Leon.
Crossette, Isaac, (1824-1893); m. 1848, Clara A. Reed, pion. 1830.
Cuddy, John (np); pion. 1829, Not.
Culow, John (a); pion. 1857, Cent.
Culver, Peter, wife Margaret Morgan; pion. 1835; (m 2); p. 72.
Cummings, Frank S., s. Charles and Hannah (Grinnell) Cummings; p. 44.
Cummings, Solomon (c. c.) (1786-1879) m. 1845, Nancy Gray, pion.
Cushman, Mariah (1821-1881) w. of Isaac Cushman; Mich. pion. 1825, pion. T. R., 1876.
Cushman, Henry D. (1846-1900; m. Thirza W.
Custard, Mrs. Alexander; p. 125.
Cutler, Leonard (h) pion. 1827, W. P. prairie.
Cutler, Thomas (c.c.) w. Amanda Belote.
Dale, Amos and Wife Mary Shineberger; 7 ch.; pion. 1848, Fl.
Daniels, Wm. M.; m. 1847 Caroline M. Fitch; pion.
Davis, Abner (b. 1815); m. 1838 Esther Ann Ray; pion. 1839.
Davis, Chapman (1759-1837); S. A. R.; anc. Emily (Davis) Purdy.
Davis, Dorance and Eliza (Gardner); pion. 1858, Col.
Deats, Grant and wife Thurza Mack; pion. 1854.
DeHaven, Peter (1722-1816); S. A. R., anc. of Olie (Fulkerson) Howard, Mrs. C. A.
Demore Hillside, p. 138.
DesVoignes, L. A., p. 140.
Dickinson, George and Sarah (Johnson) D. pion. 1832, Fl. stage coach driver.
Dimick, Elisha, tavern keeper, d. 1847; pion. 1834.
Divine, John (1821-1894) m. 1843 Carolin Wynkoop.
Dockstader, C. A. Pres. T. R., 1897-'8.
Downing Trading Post; p. p. 11-12.
Driesbach, Henry, pion. 1857, Stu.
Driskell, Phoenix, pion. 1831, T. R.
Dumond, Harmonus (1740-1778); S. A. R., anc. of Alice Yaple.
Dunkin, James B., M. D.; p. 111.
Dunn, Simeon (1820-1909); m. 1842, Esther Blodget; pion.
Early, Samuel and Wife Margaret (Gray) E.; Stage driver; pion., 1842, Mott.
Eberhard, Glen; p. 187.
Eberhard, Frederick G., M. D.; author; res. T. R.
Eddy, Barnabus and Laura Phelps; pion. 1832, Coon Hollow.
Elliott, W. N., M. D.; pion. 1832, W. P.
Emory, Aaron P.; pion. 1855, Mend.
Engle, Frederick; m. (1) Catherine King; (2) Caroline Van Buren; pion. 1832.
Engle, James, s. of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Brunge) E.; pion. 1830, B. O.
Engle, Jonathan; p. p. 37, 46.
Eschol, Deserted Village, p. p. 127-'9; 131.
Estes, S. A., p. 187.
Estes, Reuben and Lydia (Dewey); pion. 1853, Mend.
Evans, Rev. Edward, S. A. R.; p. p. 32; 174.
Evans, Musgrove, surveyor — land entry, 1825-'6.
Evert, Peter, m. 1864 Attillia Waltz.
Fellows, Abiel (dar) (1764-1833) S. A. R.; p. 175.
Fellows C. A., Mayor T. R. 1899-1900.

Fellows, Obel (1742-1809) S. A. R., anc. of Florence (Gillette) Smith—Mrs. B. E.
Fenstermacher, Peter (1815-1892) m. 1835, Elisha Reigle, pion.
Ferrand, Phineas, m. 1845 Betsey M. Kinne, pion.
Ferris, Sylvanus (1737-1834); S. A. R., anc. of Elizabeth H. Fletcher, others.
Fever-Manito and Princess; p. 23.
Field, Pardon, S. A. R.; p. 175
Fisher, Jonas, m. 1827 Mary —; 13 ch.; pion. Park; p. 91.
Fisher. Josiah, pion. 1831 Cons.
Fisher, Leonard (1809-1882) pion. 1834. Park; p. 91.
Fitch, Asa (1800-1877) platted Eschol, pion. 1831; p. 128.
Fitch, Charles Burr (b. 1774) m. Harriet Bissell p. p. 8; 127; pion. 1830, W. P.; p. 128.
Fitch, Hezekeah (1740-1820; S. A. R., anc. Ruth (Fitch) Phillips.
Fitch, Samuel.; p. 128.
Fitch, Family; p. p. 127-'8.
Flanders, Ezekiel, pion. 1844, Not.
Flanders, Ezekiel (1759-1838) S. A. R. anc. Fannie (Flanders) Dukette, Mrs. Michael.
Flanders, Francis, Soldier of 1812, pion. 1841 F. R.
Flanders, Jonathan W., pion. 1841.
Fletcher, Charles Knox (1847-1914) m. 1887 Elizabeth Hayes.
Fletcher, John W. (1806-1886) m. 1831 Sarah Knox; pion. 1829, Not.; p. 111.
Fletcher, Wm. (1748-1801) S. A. R. anc. Amanda Keech.
Floods; p. p. 141-'2.
Florence, settlement and organization; p. 114; census 1850; p. p. 116-125.
Flowerfield, settlement and organization; p. p. 86.
Flowers, native; p. p. 89-90.
Fonda, Jacob L. (a), pion. 1836, Fab.
Foods, watergrown; p. 16.
Foot, Elisha m. 1846 Augusta Libhart, pion.
Foreman, John, pion. 1829, Not.
Foresman, Fisher, (1829-1908) wife Esther (Hughes).
Foresman, Robert, Jr. (1761-1829) S. A. R. anc. Nora Dudley Beerstecher, Mrs. F. H.
Foresman, Robert, Sr. (1725-1805) S. A. R. anc. of Gertrude (Sillman) Grandall; others.
Foresman, Samuel (1725-1803) S. A. R. anc. of Marion (Sillman) Smith, Mrs. Lotha A.; others.
Forests, Destruction Of, p. p. 85-'6.
Foster, Wakeman, S. A. R. Red Coats; p. 45.
Ft. St. Joseph; p. 2.
Forty-Niners; p. p. 134-'7.
Foster, J. J., Mayor T. R., 1902, '05, '07.
Foust, John, S. A. R., pion.; p. 175.
Foust, John and Wife Mary (Houts) F., pion. 1847, Park.
Francisco, Daniel (1818-1883) and wife Hester M. (Wager) F. pion. 1842, Cons.; Pres. T. R. 1859, '61, '64, '68, '70.
Freedom, village, p. 111.
French, J. W. pion. T. R. 1854; Pres. T. R. 1880, 1906.
French, W. W., Pres. T. R. 1893-'5; Mayor 1900-'01.
Frey, John W. (1804-1872) w. Margaret Stuart.
Fulcher, Richard (1796-1877) m. 1845 Ester J. Bridgeman.
Fulkerson, George m. 1864, Nancy DeHaven, pion.
Fulkerson, Wm. and Wife Charity; p. 67.
Fur Traders; p. p. 9-15.
Fyler, Roger (1743-1778) S. A. R. anc. Emma (Fyler) Rosebrook.

Garrison, Andrew L. (b. 1842); Pri. Co. H. 28th Mich. Inf. pion.
Garrison, John, Tavern keeper, pion. 1834.
Gay, W. H., Mayor T. R. 1925.
Gee, Darius C., pion. 1836.
Gentzler, Adam s. of George; pion. 1853, W. P.
Gentzler, Conrad, S. A. R. anc. of Adam Gentzler.
Gentzler, George and Wife Catherine; p. 95.
Gentzler, Jacob and Wife Elizabeth Speck (a) pion. 1849 W. P..
Gentzler, John R. s. of Adam and Lydia A.; pion. 1854, Park.
George, E. M. and Mary (Null) G. pion. 1857, T. R.
Gibson, Hiram, m. 1839 Caroline Voorhees, pion.
Gibson, John m. Margaret Moore, pion. 1853, Not.
Gibson, Samuel, m. 1860 Martha Green, pion. 1849, Cons.
Gilispie, George W. and W. Sarah Newman, pion. 1849, T. R.
Gold Star Honor Roll,; p. p. 186-193.
Goodbridge, Allen letter; p. 131.
Graham, James L. and w. Elizabeth (Paul) G.; pion. 1840, Lpt.
Grand Traverse, see Mottville.
Gray, Barber, m. Sarah Alger; pion.
Greenwood, Spencer (1837-1910) and wife Amelia, pion.
Griffith, John (1848-1916); m. (1) Sarah Armitage, pion. (2) Lutie Armitage.
Griffith, Robert and w. Susan Cox; pion. 1857, Fab.
Guerney, Chester, p. 41.
Hall, Henry (1838-1905) m. Margaret F.; pion.; Pres. T. R. 1875-'6.
Hall, Robert, Mayor T. R., 1909.
Hagenbuch, Aaron, m. Rachel Hill; 6 ch.; pion. 1838.
Hamilton, R. C. pion. 1830.
Hamilton, John, s. of Wm. and Nancy (Igmyer) H.; m. 1834 Nancy Poe, pion. 1832.
Handy, John B.; Pres. T. R. 1888; pion. 1857. T. R.
Hardy, Geo. and w. Frances (Arney) pion. 1833.
Haring, Ophir L., Mayor T. R. 1923.
Harmonical Society, Sturgis; p. 151.
Harris Prairie, see Three Rivers, p. 144.
Hartman, John pion. 1829, Mott.
Hartman, Soloman, pion. 1829, Mott.
Harvey, Heman, pion. 1831-'2, Fab.
Harvey, Norman and Rhoda, 10 ch.; pion. 1833 Cons.
Harwood, Hiram H. (1813-1901) m. 1834 Alvira Rice; pion. 1832, Fab.; p. 75.
Harwood, Ira, pion. 1832.
Hass, Eugene; p. 187.
Hassenger, F. D. m. 1847 Margaret Lintz, pion. 1838, Cons.
Hatch, A. T. Fur Trader, Colon; pion. 1830; p. p. 11; 41.
Hatch, Winslow H. (b. 1842) m. 1881 Louisa Bobb; p. p. 139-140.
Hatch Trading Post; p. 11.
Haynes, James (1823-1881) m. Isabella Meade.
Hazzard, James m. 1846, Mariah Ferris.
Hazzard, Martin, m. 1836, Elizabeth Lancaster.
Hazzard, Wm. (1798-1878) m. Cassandra Coon; 14 ch.; pion. 1829, Not.
Heald, Arba, pion. 1827.
Herrick, S. L., M. D. (1827-1875) pion. 1850, T. R.
Hibbard, Araunah S. A. R. (?); p. 32.
Hice, Samuel (1820-1901); pion.
Hice, John P.; p. 99.
Hice, Louis K.; p. 187 World war Diary; p. p. 188-'9.
Hickey, Mannassah, Indian missionary; p. 27.
Hicks, Alexander (d. 1866, age 58).

Hile, Stephen (b. 1812) w. Rachel, pion.
Hill, Elisha (1810-1894) pion. 1849.
Hinebaugh, Jacob (b. 1790); p. 99.
Hix, Burden m. 1833, Betsey Rice, pion.
Hoats, Jonathan (b. 1805) pion. 137, Park; p. 94.
Hogan, Daniel (c. c.) m. 1837 Aurila Washborn, pion.
Hoffman, Christian Bowman (1831-1875) pion. 1833; m. Mary P. Mitchell.
Hoffman, Isaac F. (1829-1901).
Hoffman, John M., pion. 1849.
Hoffman, Phillip H. (b. 1800) pion.; p. 7.
Hoisington, Frederick A. (1830-1907) m. Rachel E. French.
Hoisington Family, p. 77.
Holtum, Richard (1820-1896) w. Isabel.
Honor Roll—Peace, p. p. 163-172.
Honor Roll—War, p. p. 173-194.
Hoppin, Ruth, p. p. 158-160; 89; 91.
Howard, C. A. Mayor T. R. 1908.
Howard, Isaac D. M. D. pion. 1856.
Howard, O. F. m. 1838 Cornelia Peek, pion. Fl.; p. 131.
Howell, Mrs. Robert, school librn. T. R.; p. 155.
Hull, John, (1816-1884) pion. Cons.
Hull, L. W., p. 189.
Hull, Levi T. ed. St. Jo' co' Advertiser; pion. 1850.
Huss, Murray J. (b. 1861) m. 1890 Marian Buck.
Hutchinson, John (1832-1916) pion.
Hutchinson, Philip (1805-1890) pion. 1836.
Huylar, J. H. (1825-1889), pion. 1838, Stu.
Ikeler, Wm. M. D. (1843-1903) m. Harriet Fellows.
Immigration, p. 33; 131.
Indian Garden Beds, p. p. 5-6.
Indian Chiefs, p. 7, also: Aniquiba, p. 10; Bamp-ta-naby, p. 27; Cush-ee-wes, p. p. 39-41; Elkhart, p. 4; Grey Wing, p. 4; Lynx Eye, p. 4; Ma-Gua-Go, p. 27; Manadoka, p. p. 26-32; Marchia; Match-e-be-nash-she-wish, p. 7; Mishawaha, p. 4; Muchmote, p. 32; Okemos, p. 3; Pokagon, p. p. 3; 28; Princess Kakima, p. 10; Quicet, p. 13; Red Bird, p. p. 31-'2; Sau-au-kette, p. 27; Sauga-nash, p. 29; See-be-wa, p. 4; Top-in-a-bee, p. 28; Wah-be-me-me, p. p. 30-31; Waheshona, p. 4; Wakazoo, p. 3; Wee-saw, p. 27.
Indian Feasts and Ceremonies; p. p. 18-19.
Indian Games; p. p. 19-22.
Indian Imagery; p. p. 22-'3.
Indian Legends: Birth of the Water Lily, p. 24; Cobweb, p. 22; The Flood, p. 24; Princess and the Fever God, p. 23; The Stone Mountain, p. 24.
Indian Manners, Customs and Beliefs; p. p. 16-25.
Indian Myths and Legends; p. p. 22-25.
Indian Sleep Song; p. 22.
Indian Trails; p. 8.
Indian Treaties; p. p. 7, 8.
Indian Tribes, Ottawas, Chippewas, Pottawatomies; p. 2.
Ingerson, Cyrus, M. D. (1806-1844) m. Margaret Logan, pion.
Ingerson, Jonathan (1730-1810) S. A. R. anc. of Matie (Iddings) Weyrick, others.
Ingraham, Joshua (1705-1793) S. A. R. anc. of Mary (Harris) Andrews, Mrs. E. H.
Irey, Col. Philip—Tory; p. 54.
Isabella Club-Org. res. of C. L. Blood, 1891.
Jackson, Geo. A. (b. 1826) w. Esther A. (b. 1827); 6 ch.; Pres. T. R. 1873.
Jackson and Whipple Log Jam; p. 142.
Jacobs, Hiram; p. 37.

James, Samuel (1724-1788) S. A. R. anc. of Mary J. Collard.
Jesuit Mission, established abt. 1780, intersection of U. S. 131 and M-60.
John H. Bowman Memorial Park, T. R.; p. p. 59-60.
Johns, Jacob (1762-1845) S. A. R. anc. of Fanny (Arthur) Plantz.
Johnson, James Eastman, pion. 1836, W. P.
Johnson, R. W.; p. 189.
Jones, De Gamo, land owner, 1830.
Jury-First at W. P., Nathan Sayas, Peter Cook, E. A. Trumbull and Wm. Cook.
Kedzie Family and the St. Jo's; p. 33.
Keightley, E. W. (b. 1843) s. of Peter K. pion.
Kellogg, R. M. pion. strawberry grower, T. R.
Kellogg and Bull, claimed first retail store in co., pion. 1829, W. P.
Kelsey, James E. m. 1863, Julia Cady, pion.; p. 69.
Kelsey, Stephen, m. 1847 Maria Moore, pion. (1823-1883); Pres. T. R. 1862, '69, '74; p. 69.
Kennedy, James and Wife Martha C. (Morse) pion. 1854 stu.
Kent, Theodore, pion., 1850.
Ketcham, Isaac, p. p. 71; 143.
Ketchum, George and Sarina (Gray) pion. 1835, W. P.
Kimbal, Isaac, p. 142.
King, James (1804-1893) m. Sophia Klose; pion. 1856, Park.
King family, pion.; p. 129.
Kinne, John C. and Serena (Van Fleet) pion. 1837.
Kinne, Capt. Elias B. and W. Martha Clark, pion. 1837, Leon.
Kinney, Harvey (1803-1884).
Klady, Wm. and w. Nancy (Knickerbocker) pion. 1834.
Kline, Abraham (1735-1828) S. A. R. anc. Mary E. (Stoufer) Silliman — Mrs. Arthur.
Kline, David, pion. 1858.
Kline, Enoch, (1833-1903) m. 1861 Harriet Fisher, pion.
Kline, John Annin (1822-1914) m. 1852 Mary Ann McKee.
Klocke, Carl came to St. Jo. co. 1882.
Klopfenstein, John; p. 189.
Knevels Family; p. 75.
Knitting; p. 94.
Knowles, L. D. M. D. (1849-1908) w. Fancella Wager.
Knowlton, Hon. Luke (1738-1810) S. A. R. anc. of Edith Lamar Burch, others.
Knox, Jacob—family, pion. 1831.
Krull, Rueben; p. 189.
Ladies' Library Association; p. 152.
Laird, Gilbert (1815-1858) pion.
Lancaster, Columbia, (np) pion. 1830 Cons.; Cent. Letter; p. p. 42-44; and Quimby; p. p. 84-'5.
Landrick, John, stage driver; p. 48.
Lane, Joseph, pion. 1829, Not.
Langley, Thomas W. (np) pion. 1830, Cent.; p. 41.
Langley, W. B. (1823-1898) m. 1847 Julia V. Woodworth, pion. Cent.
Lantz, Phillip (1810-1860) Pres. T. R., 1855; w. Esther, pion.; p. 69.
LaSalle; p. 1.
Lathrop, Edwin H. (1806-1874) and w. Hannah (Taylor) m. 1831; pion. 1831, Prairie Ronde.
Lawrence, Andrew, (np) pion. 1830, Fl.
Lawrence, Jeremiah (a) pion. 1829, W. P.
Legislature, Mich. 1835; First Senator, J. S. Barry; First Rep.'s, Benjamin Shuman, Isaac Ullman; List of members, 1836-1930; p. p. 163-4.
Lehmer, John and w. Susannah (Fickes), pion. 1855, Cons.
Leland, Andrew, pion. 1834, Mend.

Leland, George (1769-1860) m. 1800, Lydia Moore; pion. 1834, Lkt.
Leland, John (a) invented V sickle harvester; w. Sarah G. (Gaskin); pion. 1834.
Leland, Louis A. (1814-1890) m. Mary Ann Noyes, pion. 1836, Colon; p. p. 46-7.
Leonidas Settlement; p. 44.
Lewis, Oliver (1758-1839) S. A. R. anc. of Lucy (Cleveland) Van Alstyn — Mrs. A. T.
Library, T. R. Public; p. p. 62; 152-155.
Lines, Conrad (1730-1815) S. A. R. anc. Gertrude (Fairchild) Lott — Mrs. M. H.; others.
Linsley, Abiel (1730-1800) S. A. R. anc. Margaret (Linsley) Clayton — Mrs. W. F.; others.
Linsley, E. B. (1847-1914) m. 1876 Emma Burch; pres. T. R. 1889; p. 153.
Lintz, Peter and w. Elizabeth (Marlow) (a) pion. 1839, Cons.
Littlejohn, F. J.; p. 3.
Lockport, Settlement and Organization; p. p. 53-62; Census 1850; p. p. 62-74; "Town of Lpt changed to T. R. in 1846."
Lockport Township first census report in 1850.
Lomison, John b. 1808; w. Sarah; pion.; p. 99.
Loomis, Benjamin (1752-1838) S. A. R. anc. of Minnie (Williams) Moore, Mrs. Henry.
Loomis, Harvey, M. D. (a) and w. Mary Mansfield; pion. 1849, B. O.
Loomis, Hubbel, M. D. (h) platted "Newville"; pion. 1828.
Lown, Powell C. (1819-1901), pion. letter; p. 136.
Lozier, Jacob (1760-1832) S. A. R. anc. Nellie (Wood) Cupp — Mrs. Eli.
Ludwig, Samuel, b. 1801, Pa.; w. Eliza, pion. Park; p. p. 90; 95.
Lyman, Benjamin (1761-1844) S. A. R. anc. Frances (Lyman) Fletcher.
Lyman, Lewis B. (1821-1870) m. 1845, Mary Wightman, pion.
McCoy, James and Lucinda (Pierce), pion. 1832, Leon.
McInterfer, Jacob — family, pion. 1828, T. R.
McKie, Mary Ann, ed. school paper, p. 158.
McKenzie, Earl; p. 190.
McKindley, Francis L., pion. 1845, Mend.
McMillan, Alex, M. D.; (np) pion. 1829, Not.
McMurtrie, John (1795-1849) and w. Julia Ann, pion.
McMurtrie, John (1737-1791) S. A. R. anc. of Florence (Cooke) Van Horn — Mrs. V. H.
McMurtrie, P. L. (1818-1896), pion. T. R.
Maher, Peter, (1818-1901), pion.
Major, John (1811-1856) m. 1837, Jane Hetherington; pion. 1834, Fl.; p. 124.
Major, John Maxwell, (1837-1907) m. 1846 Sarah (Stout); pion. 1834 Cent.
Marantette, Patrick, (c. c.) m. 1835 Fanny Mouton; p. p. 12; 15; 39.
Marantette Trading Post; p. 13.
Masonic Lodge, T. R. chartered 1853; Ezra Cole, W. M.
Masser family, pion. 1832-'4.
Massey, Albert E., pion. 1834.
Mastermann, John — First wagon shop in co., 1833.
Mathews, George — family, pion. 1831, Leon.; p. 44.
Matthews, George and Indians, p. p. 44-5.
Mathewson, George, M. Lucy Bryant; pion. 1831, Col.
Mathewson, James (1764-1847) S. A. R. anc. Ethel (Thurston) Miller.
Mathewson, Nelson and w. Polly (Works), pion. "Took up first land in Colon twp.
Methodist Episcopal Church; p. p. 144-145; First class; p. 145; Silhouettes; p. 141.

Mormons; p. 135.
Meek, Wm. wife and 6 ch. — pion. 1828, Cons., app't Chief Justice St. Jo. Co., 1831.
Meek's Mill see Constantine.
Mendon, Settlement and Organization; p. 125.
Merrill, F. D. Mayor T. R. 1906.
Metcalf, Ezekiel — made first land entry 1828, Stu.
Metsdorf, Wm. — address; p. p. 18-19.
Middagh, Garret (1732-1810) S. A. R. anc. of Florence (Silliman) Whitaker—Mrs. F. H.
Millard, Elisha — River ark captain, pion. 1833, m. 1842 Julia Ann Salsig.
Millard, Joseph B. (1815-1890) m. 1842 Jane Hutchinson; pion. 1833, T. R.
Millard, Thos. B. (b. 1812) and w. Mary L. pion.; p. 67.
Miller, L. O.; p. 148.
Mills family pion. 1846.
Milner, G. E.; p. 190.
Milton, James Wylie and w. Elizabeth, pion. Park.
Mint, Story of; p. p. 112-114.
Moab, p. 53.
Moe, Charles and w. Maranda (Colver); pion. 1832 or '6, Stu.; p. 110.
Mohney, Abram, w. Mary Ann Weinberg, pion., 1844, Fa.
Money, Christopher (b. 1779) p. 95.
Montaigne, Benjamin (1745-1825) S. A. R. anc. of Lillian R. (Shafer) Dudd — Mrs. C. M.
Monteith, Wm. (1743-1820) S. A. R. anc. of Nina C. Worline — Mrs. M.
Montgomery, James Shera, Chaplain of the House of Representatives, former res.
Moore, Armitage G. (gr) d. 1889, age 62; w. Amanda F.; pion. 1834; p. 71.
Moore, Edward S. (1805-1885) m. (1) Mary Prutzman; m. (2) Jeannette Fisher; pion. 1837, Park; p. 90.
Moore, Col. O. H. (Kal. co.).
Moore, Stephen (1759-1813) m. Parthenia Young, S. A. R. anc. L. Belle Troy and others.
Moore and Prutzman, — first store T. R., 1836, Joseph Millard, clerk.
Moorepark; p. 90.
Morehouse, David (1740-1800) S. A. R. anc. Viola Cowling, others.
Morrison, Wm. pion. 1835, Fab.
Morrison, Wm. P. (1826-1894) m. 1850 Freelove Rounds, pion.
Morse, J. C. Pres. T. R. 1867.
Mothers — Pioneer, A Tribute to; p. 33.
Mottram, Wm., M. D., pion. 1832, Not.
Moutan, Francis, pion. 1831, Mend.
Mound Builders; p. p. 5-6.
Mowrer, Jonas (1818-1884) pion.
Mowery, C. L.; p. 190.
Mowery, Samuel D. (1848-1918) m. 1878, Ida Clapp.
Navarre, Peter, famous scout
Mullett, John, Surveyor, 1825-'6.
Myers, H. A.; p. 190.
Myths — see Indian myths and legends.
of War of 1812 (1785-1874); p. 11.
Neddo, Joseph, w. Victoria, pion. abt. 1830.
Newberry, Rev. Samuel, p. 156.
Newhall, Daniel (1734-1808) S. A. R. anc. of Eugenia L. Newhall.
Newman, H. F.; p. 190.
Newton, Luther (h) pion. 1828, W. P.
Northrop, Enos — Story by, p. 126.
Northof, John G., pion. 1836, Fl.
Nottawa, Settlement — Black Hawk scare; p. 36.
Null, Isaac (1825-1905); pion., Fl.
O'Dell, James, pion. 1832, W. P.
O'Dell, John H., M. D., res. T. R.

O'Dell, Nathan, m. 1842 Juliet Taber, pion.
O'Dell, Thomas C., pion., Mot.
Ogden, Benjamin; m. 1867, Caroline Field, pion.
Old Diggins; p. 35.
Oldorf, F. J.; p. 190.
Oman, Cyrus (np); m. 1862, Adelaid Davidson, pion. 1847.
Orton Family pion. 1837, Lpt.
Osborn, Ebenezer, 1843, Fl.
Page, David, w. Amanda (Jewel) (a) pion., 1837, Stu.
Page, Dr. — First resident physician in co.; pion. 1827, W. P.
Paine, W. H.; p. p. 153; 160-'1.
Palmer, Cyrus and w. Mary, pion. 1838, Not.
Palmer, Geo. and w. Janette, pion. 1833.
Park, Settlement and Organization; p. 90; Census 1850; p. p. 94-109.
Parker, Alex (1728-1815) S. A. R. anc. Emma F. Helm, others.
Parker, H. L.; p. 190.
Parker, John and w. Elizabeth (Leiser) pion. 1830, Stu.
Parmenter, Isaac, (1760-1851) S. A. R. anc. Flora M. (Thomas) Difenderfer— Mrs. John.
Pashby, family pion. 1834, Fl.
Payne, Wm. see Paine, Wm.
Pealer, Russell R. (1842-1918) s. of Geog. and Rebecca Boyd Pealer; 1867 located, T. R.; p. p. 156; 163.
Peek Family, pion. 1834, Fl.
Penfield, Father, p. 146.
Pendleton, Edward, pion. 1852, Stu.
Pendleton, Henry and w. Hannah Wheeler, pion. 1855, B. O.
Perrin, Benjamin (a) pion. 1836, Sher.
Perrin, S. F., Story of Indian Trails; p. 8.
Pershing, Gen. J. J. tribute's to Gen. Baldwin; p. 183; to Mich. Soldiers; p. 194.
Pettitt, Samuel S. m. 1833 Cynthia Olds, pion.
Pettit, W. D. and w. Mary C. Conn; pion. 1837; p. 70.
Pettingill, Benjamin (1759-1848) S. A. R. anc. of Catherine H. Smith.
Petty, David, pion. 1831, Sher.
Phillips, Elijah and Catherine (Hogan) pion. 1837, Stu.
Pitezel, John H. (1814-1906) w. Abbie; pion.; p. p. 145-'7.
Place, L. B. Mayor T. R. 1807.
Post, Russell, pion. 1829, Not.
Pottawatomie Chiefs; p. p. 7-8.
Powell, Milo (1810-1890) pion. 1834.
Power, Lyman and w. Hannah, pion. 1836.
Powers, Capt. Henry, pion. 1829, Not.
Prairie Corner — see Men-
Presbyterian Church; p. 144.
Prescott, Timothy (1758-1845) S. A. R. anc. Lora I. Blood.
Price, Morris (1843-1913) m. 1866 Ann Farrand.
Price, Emma, Story of Colon; p. p. 45-'8.
Provost, Jasper (1762-1854) S. A. R. anc. of Eloise (Peeke) Cummings — Mrs. F. S.
Prutzman, Abram (1814-1899) m. pion. 1834; T. R., 1838; p. 60, 61; see also Moore and Prutzman.
Prutzman, John P. (b. 1840); m. (1) Julia Goodell, m. (2) Florence Wykoff.
Prutzman, Joseph (1837-1916) m. 1863, Emma Hopkins, pion.
Puddleford; p. p. 83-4.
Pugh, Peter and w. Mary; pion.
Pulver, Underwood; p. 191.
Pulver, Peter; pion.
Putnam, Matthias (a), pion. Cons.
"Quimby", pion. 1828, Mot.
Ramsdell, Joseph (1743-1817) S. A. R. anc. Minnie (Vought) Coon — Mrs. F. H.
Ranck, Josiah (1824-1911) m. 1843 Sarah Fox; located 1866, Park.

Ranney, Rev. J., p. 144.
Raymond, Oliver, pion. 1830, Stu.; p. 51.
"Red Bridge" — First p. 142; razed 1871; 2nd red bridge built in 1871 was a Smith truss br.
Red Man's Rebuke; p. p. 28-'9.
Reed, Amos, m. 1838 Anna Hower, pion.
Reed, Isaiah (1759-1794) S. A. R. anc. Clara (Smith) Howard — Mrs. A. E., others.
Reed and Cushman, Druggists (1871-1875).
Reichert, Abraham (Richert) p. p. 34; 53.
Reiff, Abram and Catherine, pion. 1836, Cons.
Revolutionary War; p. p. 173-'5.
Rexford, H.; p. 191.
Rhoades, Lewis, pion. 1830.
Rice, Charles, pion. 1832, Fa.; p. 75.
Rice, Stephen, (1806-1881), pion. 1829.
Rich, L. B. Pres. T. R. 1858-1865.
Risdon, Orange, surveyor, 1825-'6.
Rittenhouse, Wm. (1756-1819) S. A. R. anc. Lucy (Millard) Beaumont —Mrs. G.
Rivere Des Maimis, see St. Joseph river.
River — Arks; p. 49.
Rix, M. H., Mayor T. R. 1921.
Robbins, R. V.; p. 191.
Robe, (Rev.) T. J., Circuit-rider; p. 144.
Roberts, Cyrus (1820-1893) pion. 1857, T. R.; Pres. T. R., 1878-'9.
Roberts, Timothy, 1838 m. Harriet Noble.
Rohrer, Fred, Mayor T. R. 1919.
Roof, John (1730-1798) S. A. R. anc. Susan (Fisk) Perrin — Mrs. L. B.
Root, Henry E. s. of Samuel (a); pion. 1836, Cons.
Rose, F. B.; p. 191.
Royce, Frank, Story of mint; p. 113.
Royce, Norman (b. 1806) pion. 1835, Fl.; p. p. 123; 131.
Roys Family, pion. 1853-'4.
Ruggles, Austin C., Mayor T. R. 1929-'31; "Official Tribute to Pioneers;" p. 1.
Ruggles, Ziba B. (b. 1819) m. (1) Mary Gearhart; pion. 1845; m. (2) Lydia Cole; p. p. 72; 147-150.
Runyan, Phillip E. and w. Priscilla Brush; pion. 1835, W. P.
Sabin, Marden, M. D. (1840-1917) m. 1867 Mary M. Smith; pion.; p. 111.
Sager, Joseph (b. 1845) m. 1872 C. E. Bartlett, pion.
"St. Joe's," The by B. C. Kedzie, p. 33.
St. John, Abraham (1759-1803) S. A. R. anc. Ella F. W. Custard — Mrs. Alex.
St. Joseph, — village, p. 53.
St. Jo' Co. Pioneers, 1830, p. p. 35-'6.
Salsig, Lewis (b. 1822, Pa.) m. Sophia McInterfer, pion. 1829, Lkt.
Salsig, Samuel (b. 1815) m. 1839 Catherine McInterfer, pion.
Salsig, Sophia: Story of The McInterfers; p. p. 56-7, 147.
Sanborn, Gideon and w. Jane (Upham); 10 ch.; pion. 1833, B. O.
Sarett, Lew, "Indian Imagery"; p. 22.
Sau-Gan-See-Pee; p. 1.
Sauk Wauwk Sil Buck; p. 1.
Savery, Ashael (np) (1785-1882) pion. 1825, W. P.; in Mexican war, d. Borneo, Tex.; p. p. 34, 84; Toast, p. 195.
Schaad, Conrad (a); pion. 1855, Cons.
Schaeffer, S. A., mayor T. R., 1911-'12.
Schall, Charles: Pioneer ovens, p. 16.
Schellhouse, Martin, pion. 1830-'1, Col.; p. p. 38; 46.
Schellhouse, George, pion. 1830-'1, Col.; p. 38.
Schellhouse, Lorenzo (a) m. Mrs. Cynthia Webster.

Schellhouse, Cyrus (np) m. 1852 Ann McAuley; pion. 1830-'1, Not.; p. 40.
Schellhouse, Roswell, pion. 1830.
Schools, T. R., p. p. 60-'2; 156-'8.
School Board, First in T. R., p. 60; pupils, p. 61.
Schoonmaker, Abraham, pion. 1837.
Schrader, John; p. 191.
Schurtz, Daniel, pion. 1839.
Schurtz, Frederick, pion. W.
Schurtz, John m. 1844, Mary Ann Gentry, pion.
Scidmore, Arthur W. M. D. (1867-1927) m. 1890 Louie (Parsons) was Major on General Staff, Base Hosp. World War; located T. R. 1890; Mayor T. R. 1903-04. '10 p. 167.
Scott, Phineas (1745-1819) S. A. R. anc. of Emilie Comstock.
Seaver, James E. (a) gr. s. of Wm. (S. A. R.) pion.
Seekell, Charles Leslie and James Wesley, drummers in Civil War with fa. Wm. H., fifer.
Seminaries, Pioneer Female; p. 161.
Shafer, "Chet", humorist, res. T. R.
Shaler, Becker and White Built Rosette Paper Mill 1853.
Shanefelt, Nicholas (1758-1826) S. A. R. anc. of Josephine (Shoemaker) Bouton —Mrs. James.
Sherman, Settlement and Organization; p. p. 48; 112-114.
Sherman, Benjamin, pion. 1829, Not.; p. 40-'1.
Shinnaman, Christopher, platted Moab; p. 53.
Shumaker, Wm. H. m. 1902 Carrie Mills; located T. R. 1911; ed. Daily Commercial 1911—date; Foreword; p. 2.
Sibley, Solomon; p. 7.
Sickles, Garret, (1800-1865) m. 1841 Elizabeth Alcock, pion. 1831-'2, Fa.; p. 75.
Sides, Isaac w. Elizabeth, pion. 1856 Col.; p. 47.
Silliman, Alexander (1801-1853); m. 1822 Jane (Foresman) 8 ch.; pion. 1847, Pk.
Silliman, Arthur (1831-1914) m. 1861 Mary E. (Stoufer) 3 ch.; See dedication, also p. p. 133; 149; Frank A. p. 149.
Silliman, James F. (1829-1912).
Silliman, John Brady, m. 1863 Mary C. Franklin, dau. Florence L.
Silliman, Samuel (1825-1894) pion. 1845; letters; p. p. 131-133.
Silliman, Thomas, Sr., (1756-1835) S. A. R. anc. of Sue I. Silliman, others; p. 133.
Silliman, Thomas, Jr., (1823-1893) s. of Alex.; m. (1) Lavina Hoppin; m. (2) Susan (Reed) Stock; p. 96.
Slayton, Ebenezer (1 7 5 9-1841) S. A. R. anc. Ada (Slayton) Carrick — Mrs. C. H.
Slote, James, pion. 1837.
Smith, Niles F,; p. 126.
Smith, Wm. H. River captain, pion. 1838.
Smith, Stuart A. (1826-1862) m. 1854 M. J. Reed, pion.
Smittendorf, E. D.; p. 191.
Snyder, Henry, m. (1) Lydia Moore Hoffman, m. (2) Sarah Slote.
Snyder, Nathan, m. Francis Millard; pion. 1856; 5 ch.; p. 151.
Song of the Voyagers, p. 9.
Soule, G. E.; p. 191.
Spaulding, Rufus (1 7 7 3-1870).
Spaulding, Voltaire (1798-1886) m. Lucy Everts; organized Trinity Episc. ch. 1861.
Stage Coach Travelling; p. 49.
Standish, Nathan (b. 1753) S. A. R. anc. Lottie L. Seekell.
Stanley, Adino m. 1835, Elizabeth Loomis; pion. W. P.
Starr, Charles (1847-1902); m. 1874 Lizzie Woodworth.

Stears, Arthur, p. 191; Letter, p. 192.
Stears, Thomas, pion. 1835, Mot.
Stenberg, L. F.,; p. 192.
Sterling, Joseph, p. 149.
Stevens, W. G., p. 37.
Stewart, H. D. pion. 1828, Mot.
Stewart, Alanson C. pion. 1828, W. P.
Stoufer, Wm. (1819-1900) m. 1839 Jane (Kline), 9 ch.; pion. 1846, Park; p. 96.
Sturgis, John; p. p. 49; 134.
Sturgis Settlement and Organization; p. 49.
Summer, Watson, pion. 1833, Cons.
Sutton, Jonathan (1735-1818) S. A. R. anc. Genevieve (Sutton) Keasey — Mrs. F. L.
Swan, Elias S.; p. 43.
Swartz, R. E.; p. 192.
Swartwout, Bertha, Libr'n. T. R.; p. 155.
Syas family, pion. 1828, Cons.
Symons, D. A.; p. 192.
Taft, Moses, pion. 1835, Mend.
Talbot Family, pion. 1832 or '6, Cent.
Taylor, Elias, pion. 1828, Mot.
Taylor, Henry C. m. 1867 Mary Hall.
Taylor, Wm. Mottville Tavern, p. 84.
Telfer, Wm., Tavern "Providence Green"; pion. 1832, Not.
Thomas, Wm. (b. 1833) m. 1855 Delight.
Thompson, "Squire" (Galpin) (b. 1784) pion. 1823; p. 86.
Thompson, John (1753-1833) S. A. R. anc. Jessie (Moore) Loveridge.
Thoms, Charles H. m. 1850 Charlotte A. Thiebaud.
Thoms, James (c. c.) (b. 1812) m. (1) 1837, Louisa Friedland; m. (2) Eleanor Dougherty, pion.; s. John C.; p. 150.
Thoms, Joseph (b. 1844) m. 1870 Francis Divine.
Thoms, Samuel (b. 1837), pion.
Thoms, Lewis (b. 1806) w. Sarah; pion.
"Three Rivers Kids"; p. 76.
Three Rivers Free Public Library, see Library.
Three Rivers — Settlement; p. 57; organized as a village 1855; incorporated 1871; became city, 1905.
Thorp, Darius D., pion.
"Three Brothers Federation"; p. 2.
Throp, John Allen (1822-1901 m. 1843 Catherine; p. 148.
Thomas, Hezekiah, p. 75.
Thurston, George, m. 1832 Sarah Jones, 10 ch.; p. 49.
Thurston, Massena Paine, (1812-1887); m. 1836, Lovina Washburn; pion. 1834, Col. ch.: Ulysses Ithicus, Laodice Iphigenia, Epaminondas Pelopidas, Crysomondas Pelopidas, Crysothemis Audromache, Achilles Pelides, Miltiades Aristides, Cassius Brutus, Solon Kossuth, Agamemnon Hiland Dulcena Dulcerado, Patroclus Antilocus, Wendell Phillips.
Thurber, Erastus, pion. 1833, W. P.
Tinker, Edward B. (b. 1747) m. Mary Parks.
Tinker, Silas (1748-1840) S. A. R. anc. Venice (Bidlack) Linsley — Mrs. R. B.
Tisdel, Lucian A. and w. Betsey Ann Putman; pion. 1833; p. 111.
Todd, A. M., p. 113.
Toll, Col. Isaac D.; p. p. 44; 111; 176.
Toll Family, pion. 1832-'6, Cent.
Tracy, Erastus and w. Eliza Arnold; pion. 1833, Cons.
Trowbridge, Rev. L. H., letter; p. 48.
Troy, John (1802-1884) m. 1821, Rebecca Leland.
Troy, Sylvester (b. 1829), p. 70.
Troy, Theodore (1833-1893) m. 1853 Rose Ann Clubine.

Trumbull, E. A., U. S. Marshall; pion. 1830, Cons.
Twelfth Night Customs, p. 93.
Tyler, Rev. Job and w. Sallie (Davis) pion. 1836, Col.; p. 46.
Ullman, Isaac J., p. 51.
Ulrich, Joannah (1827-1839) buried in J. H. Bowman Park.
Van Alstyn, A. T., Mayor T. R. 1927-1928.
Van Buren, Freeman C. (1827-1914), m. 1852 Mary L. Doane.
Van Buren, Henry, pion. 1835, W. P.
Vander Cook, Michael (1715-1786) S. A. R. anc. of Mae (Smith) Jones — Mrs. Arthur L.
Van Doren, Isaac (1744-1828) S. A. R. anc. Mary Huss.
Van Fleet, Daniel (1756-1840) S. A. R. anc. Leeta (Drew) Eddy — Mrs. H. D.
Van Fleet, Frank, p. 193.
Van Horn, Victor H. — Historical photographs. ——; p. 15.
Van Selous, E. W.; p. 193.
Voorhees, Abram H., pion. 1840, Mend.
Wade, Wm. (b. 1790 Engl.) m. Hannah; p. 119.
Wait, Jonathan G. (b. 1811) s. of Josiah and Ann (Graham); m. 1839 Susan Buck; pion., 1835; p. 151.
Wakeman, Adam (1805-1901) w. Eliza Hartley.
Walker, Jonas (1749-1817) S. A. R. anc. Isabel (Walker) Schoch — Mrs. C. W.
Walton, Jacob (1750-1830) S. A. R. anc. May (Walton) Rix — Mrs. M. H.
Walton, Miss G. M., quoted; p. 152.
Walton, S. A., p. 148.
War — Civil, p. p. 179-'80; Indian, p. 181; Mexican, p. p. 175-'9; Philippine, p. 182; World War, p. p. 184-194.
War Governor's Tribute to Mich. Soldiers, p. 180.
Ward, Wm. (1743-1819) S. A. R. anc. M. E. (Gorham) Beckley, — Mrs. D. R.
Watkins, George W., Mayor T. R. 1924.
Watkins, Levi and w. Lucinda (Kibbee) pion. 1832, Leon.
Watkins, L. D., p. 85.
Watkins, Mark, S. A. R., p. 174.
Watson, Frank B. and w. Myra E. located in T. R.
Wetherbee, Richard, pion. 1832, Fl.
Weed, Timothy (1758-1800) S. A. R. anc. Ella F. W. Custard, — Mrs. Alex.
Weinberg, Leander R., pion. 1844.
Weinberg, Samuel, pion. 1840.
Wells, Charles, m. 1840 Mary Ann Minor, pion.
Wells, Franklin, m. 1844 Hellen M. Briggs, pion. Cons.: p. p. 171-'2.
Wells, John M. Tavern keeper, Langley's Corners, pion. 1837, Mot.
Wellesley, E. C. and w. Jane Van Wormer, pion. 1848, Col.
Welty, R. M., p. 193.
Wenzel, B. W., p. 193.
Wescott, Samuel, pion. 1836.
Wetherbee, Asa, platter; p. p. 128-'9.
Wetherbee, Richard (1768-1848); p. 128.
Wetherbee Family; p. 128.
Wheeler, Challange S. (1800-1884), pion. 1830, Flow.
Wheeler, Daniel, pion. 1835, Flow.; p. 86.
Wheeler, W. E. (1832-1881) m. Orissa Partridge, pion.
Wheeler, Wm., pion. 1830-31, Flow.
White, Elijah (Family) pion. 1831, W. P.
White, M. G., p. 193.
White, Peter (1827-1901) pion.
White Pigeon, Chief, See Indian chiefs — Wah-ba-meme.
White Pigeon Settlement, p. 35.
Wilbur, Joseph — Homestead, p. 91.

Wilcox, Luther T. m. 1859 Rebecca Caldwell, pion. T. R. 1857.
Wilcox, Peter m. 1842, Eliza Ransom.
Willemin, Elias R. (1818-1892) m. 1849 Nancy Jane (Allen), 6 ch. pion. 1846, Park.
Winchell, John, pion. 1825-'7 W. P.
Windrowing, p. 85.
Wing, Allen (1745-1787) S. A. R. anc. Myra (Wing) Maher, — Mrs. W. F.
Wing, Robert T. (1846-1897) m. 1871 Lura Roberts.
Wolf, Amos (b. 1829) m. 1853 Marietta Sickles; pion. 1834, Lpt.
Catherine Hahn Wolf, daughter of sold. of Amer. Rev., bur. Centerville.
Wolf, John F. (1825-1893) m. Nancy D. Gibson, pion. 1834.
Wolf, Thomas, pion. 1834, Lpt.
Wolf, Jonas (1812-1896) m. (1) 1835, Margaret Gearhart; m. (2) Nancy V. Lemmon, pion. 1832 or '4.
Wolf, Josiah (b. 1819) m. 1842, Mary Ann Wescott, pion.
Wood, Clark, p. 193.
Wood, John W. (1831-1905) m. 1854 Mary J. Hathaway.
Woods, Hugh, pion. 1828, Cons.
Woodworth, Wm. (1758-1839) S. A. R. anc. of Eleanor (Thoms) Farrand, — Mrs. J. K.
Wyckoff, Peter (1734-1821) S. A. R. anc. Susannah (Throp) Miller — Mrs. L. O.
Wynkoop, Geradus (1732-1812) S. A. R. anc. C. F. (Divine) Thoms — Mrs. Joseph.
Yaple, George L. (b. 1851) m. 1873 Mary E. Hankinson; p. 163.
Yauney, Henry, Pres. T. R. 1871-'2.
Yauney Family, pion. 1836.
Yonker, George (1757-1853) S. A. R. anc. Martha (Wilcox) Caldwell — Mrs. W.
Zetalethian Society of Union Schools, p. 153.